

Some multivariate master polynomials for permutations, set partitions, and perfect matchings, and their continued fractions

Alan D. Sokal
Department of Mathematics
University College London
Gower Street
London WC1E 6BT
UNITED KINGDOM
sokal@math.ucl.ac.uk

Department of Physics
New York University
726 Broadway
New York, NY 10003
USA
sokal@nyu.edu

Jiang Zeng
Univ Lyon, Université Claude Bernard Lyon 1
CNRS UMR 5208, Institut Camille Jordan
43 blvd. du 11 novembre 1918
F-69622 Villeurbanne Cedex
FRANCE
zeng@math.univ-lyon1.fr

March 11, 2020

Abstract

We find Stieltjes-type and Jacobi-type continued fractions for some “master polynomials” that enumerate permutations, set partitions or perfect matchings with a large (sometimes infinite) number of simultaneous statistics. Our results contain many previously obtained identities as special cases, providing a common refinement of all of them.

Key Words: Permutation, set partition, perfect matching, generating polynomial, continued fraction, S-fraction, J-fraction, Dyck path, Motzkin path.

Mathematics Subject Classification (MSC 2010) codes: 05A19 (Primary); 05A05, 05A10, 05A15, 05A18, 05A30, 30B70, 33C45, 33D45 (Secondary).

Contents

1	Introduction	4
2	Permutations: Statement of results	5
2.1	S-fraction	5
2.2	Examples	7
2.3	First J-fraction	10
2.4	Second J-fraction	13
2.5	p, q -generalizations of the first J-fraction	16
2.6	p, q -generalizations of the first S-fraction	24
2.7	First master J-fraction	27
2.8	First master S-fraction	30
2.9	p, q -generalizations of the second J-fraction	32
2.10	p, q -generalizations of the second S-fraction	33
2.11	Second master J-fraction	35
2.12	Second master S-fraction	36
2.13	Counting connected components; indecomposable permutations	37
2.14	321-avoiding permutations	39
2.15	Cycle-alternating permutations	41
2.16	A remark on the inversion statistic	45
2.17	A remark on linear statistics	48
3	Set partitions: Statement of results	49
3.1	S-fraction	49
3.2	J-fraction	51
3.3	First p, q -generalization: Crossings and nestings	52
3.4	Second p, q -generalization: Overlaps and coverings	56
3.5	Some useful identities	58
3.6	Third and fourth p, q -generalizations: Crossings, nestings, overlaps and coverings	59
3.7	First master J-fraction	61
3.8	First master S-fraction	66
3.9	Second master J-fraction	67
3.10	Third and fourth master J-fractions	70
3.11	A remark on the Wachs–White statistics and inversion statistics	71
3.12	A remark on the Ehrenborg–Readdy intertwining statistic	74
3.13	Counting connected components; indecomposable set partitions	76
4	Perfect matchings	78
4.1	S-fraction	78
4.2	p, q -generalizations	84
4.3	Master S-fraction	86
4.4	Counting connected components; indecomposable perfect matchings	87

5 Preliminaries for the proofs	88
5.1 Combinatorial interpretation of continued fractions	88
5.2 Labeled Dyck and Motzkin paths	89
6 Permutations: Proofs	91
6.1 First master J-fraction:	
Proof of Theorems 2.1(a), 2.2, 2.5, 2.7 and 2.9	91
6.2 Second master J-fraction:	
Proof of Theorems 2.1(b), 2.4, 2.12 and 2.14	99
7 Set partitions: Proofs	106
7.1 S-fraction: Proof of Theorem 3.1	106
7.2 First master J-fraction: Proof of Theorems 3.2, 3.3 and 3.9	107
7.3 Second master J-fraction: Proof of Theorems 3.5 and 3.12	111
7.4 Third and fourth master J-fractions: Proof of Theorems 3.8 and 3.13	113
Acknowledgments	115
References	115

1 Introduction

If $(a_n)_{n \geq 0}$ is a sequence of combinatorial numbers or polynomials with $a_0 = 1$, it is often fruitful to seek to express its ordinary generating function as a continued fraction of either Stieltjes (S) type,

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\alpha_1 t}{1 - \frac{\alpha_2 t}{1 - \dots}}} , \quad (1.1)$$

or Jacobi (J) type,

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \gamma_0 t - \frac{\beta_1 t^2}{1 - \gamma_1 t - \frac{\beta_2 t^2}{1 - \dots}}} . \quad (1.2)$$

(Both sides of these expressions are to be interpreted as formal power series in the indeterminate t .) This line of investigation goes back at least to Euler [46, 47], but it gained impetus following Flajolet's [48] seminal discovery that any S-type (resp. J-type) continued fraction can be interpreted combinatorially as a generating function for Dyck (resp. Motzkin) paths with suitable weights for each rise and fall (resp. each rise, fall and level step). There are now literally dozens of sequences $(a_n)_{n \geq 0}$ of combinatorial numbers or polynomials for which a continued-fraction expansion of the type (1.1) or (1.2) is explicitly known.

Our approach in this paper will be (in part) to run this program in reverse: we start from a continued fraction in which the coefficients α (or β and γ) contain indeterminates in a nice pattern, and we attempt to find a combinatorial interpretation for the resulting polynomials a_n — namely, as enumerating permutations, set partitions or perfect matchings according to some natural multivariate statistics. We call our a_n “master polynomials” because our continued fractions will contain the maximum number of independent indeterminates consistent with the given pattern. As a consequence, our results will contain many previously obtained identities as special cases, providing a common refinement of all of them.

For future reference, let us recall the formula [107, p. 21] [105, p. V-31] for the contraction of an S-fraction to a J-fraction: (1.1) and (1.2) are equal if

$$\gamma_0 = \alpha_1 \quad (1.3a)$$

$$\gamma_n = \alpha_{2n} + \alpha_{2n+1} \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (1.3b)$$

$$\beta_n = \alpha_{2n-1} \alpha_{2n} \quad (1.3c)$$

The plan of this paper is as follows: In Sections 2–4 we present our results for permutations, set partitions and perfect matchings, respectively. In Section 5 we review briefly the two main ingredients of our proofs: namely, the combinatorial interpretation of continued fractions in terms of Dyck and Motzkin paths [48], and

the notion (due to Flajolet [48] and Viennot [105]) of labeled Dyck or Motzkin paths. Finally, in Sections 6 and 7 we supply the proofs for permutations and set partitions, respectively: they employ bijections onto labeled Motzkin paths. The proofs for perfect matchings will have already been presented in Section 4, as corollaries of the results for set partitions and permutations.

2 Permutations: Statement of results

2.1 S-fraction

Euler [46, section 21]¹ showed that the generating function of the factorials can be represented as an S-type continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} n! t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{1t}{1 - \frac{1t}{1 - \frac{2t}{1 - \frac{2t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (2.1)$$

with coefficients $\alpha_{2k-1} = k$, $\alpha_{2k} = k$. Inspired by (2.1), let us introduce the polynomials $P_n(x, y, u, v)$ defined by the continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(x, y, u, v) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{yt}{1 - \frac{(x+u)t}{1 - \frac{(y+v)t}{1 - \frac{(x+2u)t}{1 - \frac{(y+2v)t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (2.2)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = x + (k-1)u \quad (2.3a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = y + (k-1)v \quad (2.3b)$$

Clearly $P_n(x, y, u, v)$ is a homogeneous polynomial of degree n ; it therefore has three “truly independent” variables. Since $P_n(1, 1, 1, 1) = n!$, which enumerates permutations of an n -element set, it is plausible to expect that $P_n(x, y, u, v)$ enumerates permutations of $[n]$ according to some natural trivariate statistic. Our first result gives two alternative versions of this trivariate statistic:

¹ The paper [46], which is E247 in Eneström’s [44] catalogue, was probably written circa 1746; it was presented to the St. Petersburg Academy in 1753, and published in 1760.

Theorem 2.1 (S-fraction for permutations). *The polynomials $P_n(x, y, u, v)$ defined by (2.2)/(2.3) have the combinatorial interpretations*

$$(a) \quad P_n(x, y, u, v) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x^{\text{arec}(\sigma)} y^{\text{erec}(\sigma)} u^{n - \text{exc}(\sigma) - \text{arec}(\sigma)} v^{\text{exc}(\sigma) - \text{erec}(\sigma)} \quad (2.4)$$

and

$$(b) \quad P_n(x, y, u, v) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} y^{\text{erec}(\sigma)} u^{n - \text{exc}(\sigma) - \text{cyc}(\sigma)} v^{\text{exc}(\sigma) - \text{erec}(\sigma)} \quad (2.5)$$

We will prove parts (a) and (b) in Sections 6.1 and 6.2, respectively, as special cases of more general results.

To explain the symbols used here — and others to be used subsequently — let us define the relevant permutation statistics. Given a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$, an index $i \in [n]$ (or a value $\sigma(i) \in [n]$) is called a

- *record* (rec) (or *left-to-right maximum*) if $\sigma(j) < \sigma(i)$ for all $j < i$ [note in particular that the index 1 is always a record and that the value n is always a record];
- *antirecord* (arec) (or *right-to-left minimum*) if $\sigma(j) > \sigma(i)$ for all $j > i$ [note in particular that the index n is always an antirecord and that the value 1 is always an antirecord];
- *exclusive record* (erec) if it is a record and not also an antirecord;
- *exclusive antirecord* (earec) if it is an antirecord and not also a record;
- *record-antirecord* (rar) (or *pivot*) if it is both a record and an antirecord;
- *neither-record-antirecord* (nrar) if it is neither a record nor an antirecord.

Every index i thus belongs to exactly one of the latter four types; we refer to this classification as the *record classification*. We denote the number of cycles, records, antirecords, ... in σ by $\text{cyc}(\sigma)$, $\text{rec}(\sigma)$, $\text{arec}(\sigma)$, ..., respectively.

Next we say that an index $i \in [n]$ is a

- *cycle peak* (cpeak) if $\sigma^{-1}(i) < i > \sigma(i)$;
- *cycle valley* (cval) if $\sigma^{-1}(i) > i < \sigma(i)$;
- *cycle double rise* (cdrise) if $\sigma^{-1}(i) < i < \sigma(i)$;
- *cycle double fall* (cdfall) if $\sigma^{-1}(i) > i > \sigma(i)$;
- *fixed point* (fix) if $\sigma^{-1}(i) = i = \sigma(i)$.

Clearly every index i belongs to exactly one of these five types; we refer to this classification as the *cycle classification*. A rougher classification is that an index $i \in [n]$ (or a value $\sigma(i) \in [n]$) is an

- *excedance* (exc) if $\sigma(i) > i$ [i.e. i is either a cycle valley or a cycle double rise];
- *anti-excedance* (aexc) if $\sigma(i) < i$ [i.e. i is either a cycle peak or a cycle double fall];
- *fixed point* (fix) if $\sigma(i) = i$.

Clearly every index i belongs to exactly one of these three types. We also say that i is a *weak excedance* if $\sigma(i) \geq i$, and a *weak anti-excedance* if $\sigma(i) \leq i$.

The record and cycle classifications of indices are related as follows:

- Every record is a weak excedance, and every exclusive record is an excedance.
- Every antirecord is a weak anti-excedance, and every exclusive antirecord is an anti-excedance.
- Every record-antirecord is a fixed point.

Furthermore,

- The largest (resp. smallest) element of a cycle of length ≥ 2 is always a cycle peak (resp. cycle valley).

and hence in particular

- Every cycle contains at least one non-excedance, and at least one non-anti-excedance.

It follows that $\text{exc} - \text{erec}$, $n - \text{exc} - \text{arec}$ and $n - \text{exc} - \text{cyc}$ are all nonnegative, so that the right-hand sides of (2.4) and (2.5) are indeed polynomials.

2.2 Examples

Many special cases of Theorem 2.1 were previously known. For instance:

- The Stirling cycle polynomials

$$P_n(x, 1, 1, 1) = S_n(x) = \sum_{k=0}^n \begin{bmatrix} n \\ k \end{bmatrix} x^k = x(x+1) \cdots (x+n-1), \quad (2.6)$$

where $\begin{bmatrix} n \\ k \end{bmatrix}$ denotes the number of permutations of $[n]$ with k cycles (or k antirecords²); or their homogenized version

$$P_n(x, y, y, y) = S_n(x, y) = \sum_{k=0}^n \begin{bmatrix} n \\ k \end{bmatrix} x^k y^{n-k} = x(x+y) \cdots (x+(n-1)y). \quad (2.7)$$

The continued fraction (2.2) for this case was found already by Euler [46, section 26] [47].³

² Foata's fundamental transformation [52, section I.3] [96, pp. 17–18] [13, section 3.3.1] shows that cyc and rec (or equivalently arec) are equidistributed on \mathfrak{S}_n .

³ The paper [47], which is E616 in Eneström's [44] catalogue, was apparently presented to the St. Petersburg Academy in 1776, and published posthumously in 1788.

- The Eulerian polynomials

$$P_n(1, y, 1, y) = A_n(y) = \sum_{k=0}^n \left\langle \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\rangle y^k \quad (2.8)$$

where $\left\langle \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\rangle$ denotes the number of permutations of $[n]$ with k excedances (or k descents); or their homogenized version

$$P_n(x, y, x, y) = A_n(x, y) = \sum_{k=0}^n \left\langle \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\rangle x^{n-k} y^k. \quad (2.9)$$

The continued fraction (2.2) for this case was found by Stieltjes [99, section 79].⁴

- A two-variable combination of the Stirling cycle and Eulerian polynomials [15, 17, 18, 33, 52, 66, 69, 90]

$$P_n(x, y, 1, y) = F_n(x, y) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} y^{\text{exc}(\sigma)} \quad (2.10)$$

or its homogenized version

$$P_n(x, y, u, y) = F_n(x, y, u) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} y^{\text{exc}(\sigma)} u^{n-\text{exc}(\sigma)-\text{cyc}(\sigma)}. \quad (2.11)$$

The continued fraction (2.2) for this case was again found by Stieltjes [99, section 81].⁵ These polynomials have a nice explicit formula [33, 89] that can be derived by simple algebra from [33, eqns. (1.3)/(3.3)/(3.5)] [69, Corollary 2.3]:

$$P_n(x, y, u, y) = \sum_{k=0}^n \left\{ \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\} (y - u)^{n-k} \prod_{j=0}^{k-1} (x + ju) \quad (2.12)$$

where $\left\{ \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\}$ denotes the number of partitions of an n -element set into k nonempty blocks. When $u = y$ this reduces to (2.7); when $u = x$ it becomes [using (2.9)] the well-known [57, eqns. (6.39)/(6.40)] identity

$$\sum_{k=0}^n \left\langle \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\rangle x^{n-k} y^k = \sum_{k=0}^n k! \left\{ \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\} (y - x)^{n-k} x^k \quad (2.13)$$

⁴ Stieltjes does not specifically mention the Eulerian polynomials, but he does state that the continued fraction is the formal Laplace transform of $(1 - y)/(e^{t(y-1)} - y)$, which is well known to be the exponential generating function of the Eulerian polynomials. Stieltjes also refrains from showing the proof: “Pour abrégé, je supprime toujours les artifices qu’il faut employer pour obtenir la transformation de l’intégrale définie en fraction continue” (!). But a proof is sketched, albeit also without much explanation, in the book of Wall [107, pp. 207–208]. The J-fraction corresponding to the contraction (1.3) of this S-fraction was proven, by combinatorial methods, by Flajolet [48, Theorem 3B(ii) with a slight typographical error]. Also, Dumont [37, Propositions 2 and 7] gave a direct combinatorial proof of the S-fraction, based on an interpretation of the Eulerian polynomials in terms of “bipartite involutions of $[2n]$ ” and a bijection of these onto Dyck paths.

⁵ Once again, Stieltjes does not specifically mention the polynomials, but he states that the continued fraction is the formal Laplace transform of $[(1 - y)/(e^{t(y-1)} - y)]^x$, which is the exponential generating function of the polynomials $P_n(x, y, 1, y)$.

that relates the Eulerian polynomials to the ordered Bell polynomials.⁶

- The record-antirecord permutation polynomials

$$P_n(a, b, 1, 1) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} a^{\text{arec}(\sigma)} b^{\text{erec}(\sigma)} \quad (2.14)$$

or their homogenized version

$$P_n(a, b, c, c) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} a^{\text{arec}(\sigma)} b^{\text{erec}(\sigma)} c^{n - \text{arec}(\sigma) - \text{erec}(\sigma)} \quad (2.15a)$$

$$= \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} a^{\text{arec}(\sigma)} b^{\text{erec}(\sigma)} c^{\text{nrar}(\sigma)} . \quad (2.15b)$$

Dumont and Kreweras [39] proved the continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(a, b, 1, 1) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{at}{1 - \frac{bt}{1 - \frac{(a+1)t}{1 - \frac{(b+1)t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (2.16a)$$

$$= {}_2F_0\left(\begin{matrix} a, b \\ - \end{matrix} \middle| t\right) / {}_2F_0\left(\begin{matrix} a, b-1 \\ - \end{matrix} \middle| t\right) , \quad (2.16b)$$

where the second equality is a classic [107, section 92] [59, Theorem 6.5] corollary of Gauss' continued fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_2F_1$.⁷ These polynomials are also essentially identical to the Martin–Kearney [76] polynomials: see [43] for details. See also Section 2.6 below for a q -generalization of (2.14)/(2.16).

- As a special case of (2.15), the polynomials [78, A145879/A202992]

$$P_n(x, x, u, u) = \sum_{k=0}^n T(n, k) x^{n-k} u^k \quad (2.17)$$

where $T(n, k)$ is the number of permutations $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ having exactly k indices that are the middle point of a pattern 321 (clearly $0 \leq k \leq n - 2$ when $n \geq 2$).

⁶ The ordered Bell polynomials appear already (albeit without the combinatorial interpretation) in Euler's book *Foundations of Differential Calculus, with Applications to Finite Analysis and Series*, first published in 1755 [45, paragraph 172]. This book is E212 in Eneström's [44] catalogue. Furthermore, the identity (2.13) appears already there [45, paragraphs 172 and 173]; it was rediscovered a century-and-a-half later by Frobenius [55]. See also [49, pp. 150–151] for a simple bijective proof.

⁷ Dumont and Kreweras [39] stated their result in terms of records and exclusive antirecords, which is of course equivalent to (2.14) via the bijection $\sigma \mapsto R \circ \sigma \circ R$ with $R(i) = n + 1 - i$ (i.e. reversal combined with complementation).

In particular, $T(n, 0)$ is the number of 321-avoiding permutations, which equals the Catalan number C_n ; so these polynomials interpolate between C_n and $n!$.⁸

- As another special case of (2.15), the homogenized Narayana polynomials [78, A001263/A090181]

$$P_n(x, y, 0, 0) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n(321)} x^{\text{arec}(\sigma)} y^{\text{erec}(\sigma)} \quad (2.18a)$$

$$= \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n(321)} x^{\text{arec}(\sigma)} y^{\text{exc}(\sigma)} \quad (2.18b)$$

$$= \sum_{k=0}^n \frac{1}{n} \binom{n}{k} \binom{n}{k-1} x^k y^{n-k}, \quad (2.18c)$$

which count 321-avoiding permutations according to the number of antirecords or exclusive records or excedances (among many other combinatorial interpretations [100, 101]).⁹ These interpretations of the Narayana numbers were found by Vella [104, Proposition 2.12] and Elizalde [41, Proposition 2.7(1)].

2.3 First J-fraction

In Section 2.1 we classified indices in a permutation according to their record status (exclusive record, exclusive antirecord, record-antirecord or neither-record-antirecord) and also according to their cycle status (cycle peak, cycle valley, cycle double rise, cycle double fall or fixed point). Applying now both classifications simultaneously, we obtain 10 disjoint categories:

- ereccval: exclusive records that are also cycle valleys;
- ereccdrise: exclusive records that are also cycle double rises;
- eareccpeak: exclusive antirecords that are also cycle peaks;
- eareccdfall: exclusive antirecords that are also cycle double falls;
- rar: record-antirecords (these are always fixed points);
- nrcpeak: neither-record-antirecords that are also cycle peaks;
- nrccval: neither-record-antirecords that are also cycle valleys;
- nrccdrise: neither-record-antirecords that are also cycle double rises;

⁸ We thank Andrew Elvey Price for drawing our attention to these polynomials.

⁹ For a 321-avoiding permutation — that is, one in which there are no neither-record-antirecords — the containments given in (a)–(c) above are equalities: that is, an index i is a record (resp. exclusive record, antirecord, exclusive antirecord) if and only if it is a weak excedance (resp. excedance, weak anti-excedance, anti-excedance). See Section 2.14 below for further enumerative results on 321-avoiding permutations.

- nrcdfall: neither-record-antirecords that are also cycle double falls;
- nrfix: neither-record-antirecords that are also fixed points.

Clearly every index i belongs to exactly one of these 10 types; we call this the *record-and-cycle classification*. The master polynomial encoding all these statistics is

$$Q_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, z, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, w) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x_1^{\text{eareccpeak}(\sigma)} x_2^{\text{eareccdfall}(\sigma)} y_1^{\text{ereccval}(\sigma)} y_2^{\text{ereccdrise}(\sigma)} z^{\text{rar}(\sigma)} \times u_1^{\text{nrcpeak}(\sigma)} u_2^{\text{nrcdfall}(\sigma)} v_1^{\text{nrcval}(\sigma)} v_2^{\text{nrcdrise}(\sigma)} w^{\text{nrfix}(\sigma)}. \quad (2.19)$$

(Thus, the variables x_1, y_1, u_1, v_1 are associated to cycle peaks and valleys, x_2, y_2, u_2, v_2 to cycle double rises and falls, and z, w to fixed points.) It turns out that these 10-variable homogeneous polynomials have a beautiful J-fraction.

But we can go farther, by further refining the classification of fixed points. If i is a fixed point of σ , we define its *level* by

$$\text{lev}(i, \sigma) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \#\{j < i: \sigma(j) > i\} = \#\{j > i: \sigma(j) < i\}. \quad (2.20)$$

[The two expressions are equal because σ is a bijection from $[1, i) \cup (i, n]$ to itself.] Note that for $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$, we have $0 \leq \text{lev}(i, \sigma) \leq \min(i-1, n-i) \leq \lfloor (n-1)/2 \rfloor$. Clearly, a fixed point i is a record-antirecord if and only if its level is 0, and a neither-record-antirecord if and only if its level is ≥ 1 . Let us now count the number of fixed points of each level: for $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ and $\ell \geq 0$ we define

$$\text{fix}(\sigma, \ell) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \#\{i \in [n]: \sigma(i) = i \text{ and } \text{lev}(i, \sigma) = \ell\}. \quad (2.21)$$

We then introduce indeterminates $\mathbf{w} = (w_\ell)_{\ell \geq 0}$ and write

$$\mathbf{w}^{\text{fix}(\sigma)} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \prod_{\ell=0}^{\infty} w_\ell^{\text{fix}(\sigma, \ell)} = \prod_{i \in \text{fix}} w_{\text{lev}(i, \sigma)}. \quad (2.22)$$

The master polynomial encoding all these (now infinitely many) statistics is

$$Q_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w}) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x_1^{\text{eareccpeak}(\sigma)} x_2^{\text{eareccdfall}(\sigma)} y_1^{\text{ereccval}(\sigma)} y_2^{\text{ereccdrise}(\sigma)} \times u_1^{\text{nrcpeak}(\sigma)} u_2^{\text{nrcdfall}(\sigma)} v_1^{\text{nrcval}(\sigma)} v_2^{\text{nrcdrise}(\sigma)} \mathbf{w}^{\text{fix}(\sigma)}, \quad (2.23)$$

which reduces to (2.19) if we set $w_0 = z$ and $w_\ell = w$ for $\ell \geq 1$. We then have:

Theorem 2.2 (First J-fraction for permutations). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials (2.23) has the J-type continued fraction*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} Q_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w}) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - w_0 t - \frac{x_1 y_1 t^2}{1 - (x_2 + y_2 + w_1) t - \frac{(x_1 + u_1)(y_1 + v_1) t^2}{1 - (x_2 + u_2 + y_2 + v_2 + w_2) t - \frac{(x_1 + 2u_1)(y_1 + 2v_1) t^2}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.24)$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_0 = w_0 \quad (2.25a)$$

$$\gamma_n = [x_2 + (n-1)u_2] + [y_2 + (n-1)v_2] + w_n \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (2.25b)$$

$$\beta_n = [x_1 + (n-1)u_1] [y_1 + (n-1)v_1] \quad (2.25c)$$

We will prove this theorem in Section 6.1, as a special case of a more general result.

Remark. The continued fraction (2.24) shows that Q_n depends on its arguments only via the combinations (2.25a,b,c). In particular, it depends on x_2, y_2 only via the combination $x_2 + y_2$, and on u_2, v_2 only via the combination $u_2 + v_2$; consequently (but more weakly), it is symmetric under $x_2 \leftrightarrow y_2$ and independently under $u_2 \leftrightarrow v_2$. Furthermore, it is symmetric under $(x_1, u_1) \leftrightarrow (y_1, v_1)$. It would be interesting to try to understand combinatorially (directly at the level of permutations) why these properties hold.

One very special case of these properties is easy to understand combinatorially: Q_n is invariant under the simultaneous interchange $(x_1, u_1, x_2, u_2) \leftrightarrow (y_1, v_1, y_2, v_2)$. This is because the bijection $\sigma \mapsto R \circ \sigma \circ R$ with $R(i) = n + 1 - i$ (i.e. reversal combined with complementation) interchanges cycle peaks with cycle valleys, cycle double rises with cycle double falls, and records with antirecords (while preserving the number of fixed points at each level). But the more specific properties encoded in (2.25) remain mysterious. ■

Comparing (2.23) with (2.4), we see that $Q_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w})$ reduces to $P_n(x, y, u, v)$ if we set

$$x_1 = x_2 = w_0 = x, \quad y_1 = y_2 = y, \quad u_1 = u_2 = w_1 = w_2 = \dots = u, \quad v_1 = v_2 = v. \quad (2.26)$$

With this specialization the J-fraction coefficients (2.25) reduce to

$$\gamma_0 = x \quad (2.27a)$$

$$\gamma_n = (x + nu) + [y + (n-1)v] \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (2.27b)$$

$$\beta_n = [x + (n-1)u] [y + (n-1)v] \quad (2.27c)$$

which are precisely those that arise as the contraction (1.3) of an S-type continued fraction with coefficients (2.3). So Theorem 2.1(a) is an immediate consequence of a very special case of Theorem 2.2.

2.4 Second J-fraction

The generalization of Theorem 2.1(b) is less satisfying, because *cyc* does not seem to mesh well with the record classification: even the three-variable polynomials

$$\widehat{P}_n(x, y, \lambda) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x^{\text{arec}(\sigma)} y^{\text{erec}(\sigma)} \lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} \quad (2.28)$$

do not have a J-fraction with polynomial coefficients (starting at γ_2 we get rational functions).¹⁰ However, *cyc* does mesh well with the complete cycle classification (*cpeak*, *cdfall*, *cval*, *cdrise*, *fix*), as was shown by one of us [109, Théorème 3] more than two decades ago.¹¹ In fact, it seems that *cyc* *almost* meshes with the complete record-and-cycle classification; and we can also include the refined classification of fixed points. Let us define the polynomial

$$\begin{aligned} \widehat{Q}_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w}, \lambda) = \\ \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x_1^{\text{eareccpeak}(\sigma)} x_2^{\text{eareccdfall}(\sigma)} y_1^{\text{ereccval}(\sigma)} y_2^{\text{ereccdrise}(\sigma)} \times \\ u_1^{\text{nrcpeak}(\sigma)} u_2^{\text{nrcdfall}(\sigma)} v_1^{\text{nrcval}(\sigma)} v_2^{\text{nrcdrise}(\sigma)} \mathbf{w}^{\text{fix}(\sigma)} \lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)}, \end{aligned} \quad (2.29)$$

¹⁰ The first coefficients are

$$\gamma_0 = \lambda x, \quad \beta_1 = \lambda xy, \quad \gamma_1 = \lambda + x + y, \quad \beta_2 = \lambda + x + y + \lambda xy,$$

followed by

$$\gamma_2 = \frac{(x+y)(3+xy) + (2+x+x^2+y+4xy+y^2)\lambda + (1+xy)\lambda^2}{\lambda + x + y + \lambda xy}.$$

It can then be shown that

- (a) γ_2 is not a polynomial in x (when y and λ are given fixed real values) unless $\lambda \in \{-1, 0, +1\}$ or $y \in \{-1, +1\}$ or $\lambda y = -1$.
- (b) γ_2 is not a polynomial in y unless $\lambda \in \{-1, 0, +1\}$ or $x \in \{-1, +1\}$ or $\lambda x = -1$.
- (c) γ_2 is not a polynomial in λ unless $x \in \{-1, +1\}$ or $y \in \{-1, +1\}$ or $x + y = 0$ or $xy = -1$.

¹¹ The paper [109] used traditional combinatorial methods to establish an exponential generating function for permutations with these weights, and then used algebraic methods to transform this exponential generating function into a continued fraction for the ordinary generating function. Here, by contrast, we employ bijections onto labeled Motzkin paths to establish the continued fraction directly. We think it is instructive to compare these two quite different methods of proof.

A special case of [109, Théorème 3] with one fewer “truly independent” variable — namely, including *cval*, *cdrise*, *fix* and *cyc*, but not distinguishing *cpeak* from *cdfall* — was obtained recently by Elizalde [42, eqn. (3)], using a bijection onto labeled Motzkin paths that is essentially the same as ours. We will discuss the connection with Elizalde’s work in Sections 2.16 and 6.2.

which extends (2.23) by including the factor $\lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)}$. We find *empirically* that we need make only one specialization — either $u_1 = x_1$ or $v_1 = y_1$ — to obtain a good J-fraction. Let us state the latter:

Conjecture 2.3. *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials \widehat{Q}_n specialized to $v_1 = y_1$ has the J-type continued fraction*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \widehat{Q}_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w}, \lambda) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \lambda w_0 t - \frac{\lambda x_1 y_1 t^2}{1 - (x_2 + y_2 + \lambda w_1) t - \frac{(\lambda + 1)(x_1 + u_1) y_1 t^2}{1 - (x_2 + y_2 + u_2 + v_2 + \lambda w_2) t - \frac{(\lambda + 2)(x_1 + 2u_1) y_1 t^2}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.30)$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_0 = \lambda w_0 \quad (2.31a)$$

$$\gamma_n = [x_2 + (n - 1)u_2] + [y_2 + (n - 1)v_2] + \lambda w_n \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (2.31b)$$

$$\beta_n = (\lambda + n - 1) [x_1 + (n - 1)u_1] y_1 \quad (2.31c)$$

We have tested this conjecture through $n = 12$.¹²

Alas, we are unable at present to prove Conjecture 2.3; we are only able to prove the weaker version in which we make the *two* specializations $v_1 = y_1$ and $v_2 = y_2$:

Theorem 2.4 (Second J-fraction for permutations). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials \widehat{Q}_n specialized to $v_1 = y_1$ and $v_2 = y_2$ has the J-type continued*

¹² The CPU time and memory required for this computation were as follows:

n	CPU time (seconds)	Memory (gigabytes)
7	4	0.04
8	32	0.06
9	301	0.2
10	3125	2
11	35947	24
12	456045	299

This computation was carried out in MATHEMATICA 11.1.0 on a Dell PowerEdge R930 computer with 2 TB shared memory and four Intel Xeon E7-8891v4 CPUs running at 2.8 GHz. Our attempt at computing $n = 13$ crashed for lack of memory.

fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \widehat{Q}_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, y_1, y_2, \mathbf{w}, \lambda) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \lambda w_0 t - \frac{\lambda x_1 y_1 t^2}{1 - (x_2 + y_2 + \lambda w_1) t - \frac{(\lambda + 1)(x_1 + u_1) y_1 t^2}{1 - (x_2 + 2y_2 + u_2 + \lambda w_2) t - \frac{(\lambda + 2)(x_1 + 2u_1) y_1 t^2}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.32)$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_0 = \lambda w_0 \quad (2.33a)$$

$$\gamma_n = [x_2 + (n-1)u_2] + n y_2 + \lambda w_n \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (2.33b)$$

$$\beta_n = (\lambda + n - 1) [x_1 + (n-1)u_1] y_1 \quad (2.33c)$$

We will prove this theorem in Section 6.2, as a special case of a more general result.

Comparing (2.29) with (2.5), we see that if we set

$$x_1 = x_2 = y, \quad u_1 = u_2 = v, \quad y_1 = y_2 = v_1 = v_2 = w_\ell = u, \quad \lambda = x/u, \quad (2.34)$$

then $\widehat{Q}_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w}, \lambda)$ reduces to

$$\sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} y^{\text{earec}(\sigma)} u^{n - \text{aexc}(\sigma) - \text{cyc}(\sigma)} v^{\text{aexc}(\sigma) - \text{earec}(\sigma)}, \quad (2.35)$$

which is of course equivalent to (2.5) via the bijection $\sigma \mapsto R \circ \sigma \circ R$ with $R(i) = n+1-i$, which interchanges $\text{earec} \leftrightarrow \text{erec}$ and $\text{aexc} \leftrightarrow \text{exc}$ while preserving cyc . With this specialization the J-fraction coefficients (2.33) reduce to (2.27), which in turn arise by contraction from the S-fraction with coefficients (2.3). So Theorem 2.1(b) is an immediate consequence of a very special case of Theorem 2.4.

Here is another interesting specialization of Theorem 2.4: let us take

$$x_1 = z u_1, \quad x_2 = z w, \quad v_1 = y_1, \quad v_2 = y_2, \quad w_0 = z, \quad w_\ell = w \text{ for } \ell \geq 1, \quad (2.36)$$

so that $\widehat{Q}_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w}, \lambda)$ reduces to

$$\sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} z^{\text{arec}(\sigma)} y_1^{\text{cval}(\sigma)} y_2^{\text{cdrise}(\sigma)} u_1^{\text{cpeak}(\sigma)} u_2^{\text{nrcdfall}(\sigma)} w^{\text{nrfix}(\sigma) + \text{eareccdfall}(\sigma)} \lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)}. \quad (2.37)$$

Then these polynomials have a J-fraction with coefficients

$$\gamma_0 = \lambda z \quad (2.38a)$$

$$\gamma_n = (\lambda + z)w + (n-1)u_2 + n y_2 \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (2.38b)$$

$$\beta_n = (\lambda + n - 1) (z + n - 1) u_1 y_1 \quad (2.38c)$$

which are symmetric under $z \leftrightarrow \lambda$. This symmetry of the joint distribution of $(\text{arec}, \text{cval}, \text{cdrise}, \text{cpeak}, \text{nrcdfall}, \text{nrfix} + \text{eareccdfall}, \text{cyc})$ under $\text{arec} \leftrightarrow \text{cyc}$ generalizes the symmetry of $(\text{arec}, \text{cyc})$ that was found by Cori [27, Theorem 2]. It would be interesting to find a bijective explanation of this symmetry.

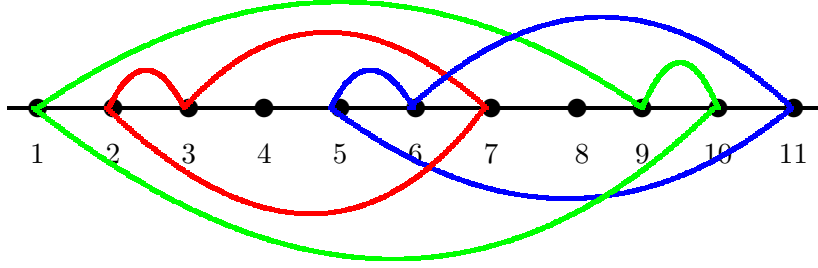


Figure 1: Pictorial representation of the permutation $\sigma = 9\ 3\ 7\ 4\ 6\ 11\ 2\ 8\ 10\ 1\ 5 = (1, 9, 10) (2, 3, 7) (4) (5, 6, 11) (8) \in \mathfrak{S}_{11}$.

2.5 p, q -generalizations of the first J-fraction

We can further extend Theorems 2.1(a) and 2.2 by introducing a p, q -generalization. Recall that for integer $n \geq 0$ we define

$$[n]_{p,q} = \frac{p^n - q^n}{p - q} = \sum_{j=0}^{n-1} p^j q^{n-1-j} \quad (2.39)$$

where p and q are indeterminates; it is a homogeneous polynomial of degree $n - 1$ in p and q , which is symmetric in p and q . In particular, $[0]_{p,q} = 0$ and $[1]_{p,q} = 1$; and for $n \geq 1$ we have the recurrence

$$[n]_{p,q} = p[n-1]_{p,q} + q^{n-1} = q[n-1]_{p,q} + p^{n-1}. \quad (2.40)$$

If $p = 1$, then $[n]_{1,q}$ is the well-known q -integer

$$[n]_q = [n]_{1,q} = \frac{1 - q^n}{1 - q} = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } n = 0 \\ 1 + q + q^2 + \dots + q^{n-1} & \text{if } n \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.41)$$

If $p = 0$, then

$$[n]_{0,q} = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } n = 0 \\ q^{n-1} & \text{if } n \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.42)$$

The statistics on permutations corresponding to the variables p and q will be *crossings* and *nestings*, defined as follows: First we associate to each permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ a pictorial representation (Figure 1) by placing vertices $1, 2, \dots, n$ along a horizontal axis and then drawing an arc from i to $\sigma(i)$ above (resp. below) the horizontal axis in case $\sigma(i) > i$ [resp. $\sigma(i) < i$]; if $\sigma(i) = i$ we do not draw any arc. Each vertex thus has either out-degree = in-degree = 1 (if it is not a fixed point) or out-degree = in-degree = 0 (if it is a fixed point). Of course, the arrows on the arcs are redundant, because the arrow on an arc above (resp. below) the axis always points to the right (resp. left).

We then say that a quadruplet $i < j < k < l$ forms an

- *upper crossing* (ucross) if $k = \sigma(i)$ and $l = \sigma(j)$;
- *lower crossing* (lcross) if $i = \sigma(k)$ and $j = \sigma(l)$;
- *upper nesting* (unest) if $l = \sigma(i)$ and $k = \sigma(j)$;
- *lower nesting* (lnest) if $i = \sigma(l)$ and $j = \sigma(k)$.

We also consider some “degenerate” cases with $j = k$, by saying that a triplet $i < j < l$ forms an

- *upper joining* (ujoin) if $j = \sigma(i)$ and $l = \sigma(j)$ [i.e. the index j is a cycle double rise];
- *lower joining* (ljoin) if $i = \sigma(j)$ and $j = \sigma(l)$ [i.e. the index j is a cycle double fall];
- *upper pseudo-nesting* (upsnest) if $l = \sigma(i)$ and $j = \sigma(j)$;
- *lower pseudo-nesting* (lpsnest) if $i = \sigma(l)$ and $j = \sigma(j)$.

See Figure 2. Note that $\text{upsnest}(\sigma) = \text{lpsnest}(\sigma)$ for all σ , since for each fixed point j , the number of pairs (i, l) with $i < j < l$ such that $l = \sigma(i)$ has to equal the number of such pairs with $i = \sigma(l)$ [it is just $\text{lev}(j, \sigma)$ as defined in (2.20)]; we therefore write these two statistics simply as

$$\text{psnest}(\sigma) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \text{upsnest}(\sigma) = \text{lpsnest}(\sigma). \quad (2.43)$$

And of course $\text{ujoin} = \text{cdrise}$ and $\text{ljoin} = \text{cdfall}$.

Note also that

$$\text{ucross}(\sigma) = \text{lcross}(\sigma^{-1}) \quad (2.44a)$$

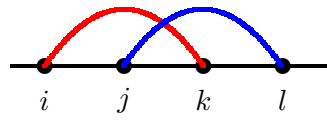
$$\text{unest}(\sigma) = \text{lnest}(\sigma^{-1}) \quad (2.44b)$$

$$\text{ujoin}(\sigma) = \text{ljoin}(\sigma^{-1}) \quad (2.44c)$$

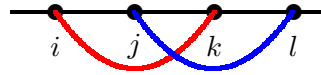
$$\text{psnest}(\sigma) = \text{psnest}(\sigma^{-1}) \quad (2.44d)$$

We can further refine the four crossing/nesting categories by examining more closely the status of the inner index (j or k) whose *outgoing* arc belonged to the crossing or nesting: we say that a quadruplet $i < j < k < l$ forms an

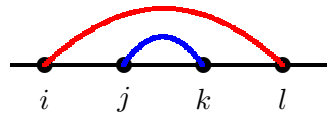
- *upper crossing of type cval* (ucrosscval) if $k = \sigma(i)$ and $l = \sigma(j)$ and $\sigma^{-1}(j) > j$;
- *upper crossing of type cdrise* (ucrosscdrise) if $k = \sigma(i)$ and $l = \sigma(j)$ and $\sigma^{-1}(j) < j$;
- *lower crossing of type cpeak* (lcrosscpeak) if $i = \sigma(k)$ and $j = \sigma(l)$ and $\sigma^{-1}(k) < k$;
- *lower crossing of type cdfall* (lcrosscdfall) if $i = \sigma(k)$ and $j = \sigma(l)$ and $\sigma^{-1}(k) > k$;
- *upper nesting of type cval* (unestcval) if $l = \sigma(i)$ and $k = \sigma(j)$ and $\sigma^{-1}(j) > j$;
- *upper nesting of type cdrise* (unestcdrise) if $l = \sigma(i)$ and $k = \sigma(j)$ and $\sigma^{-1}(j) < j$;



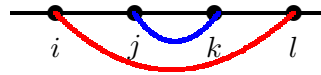
Upper crossing



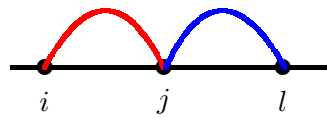
Lower crossing



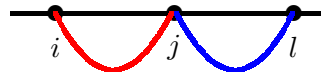
Upper nesting



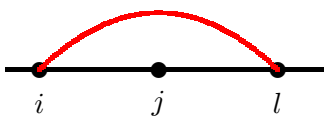
Lower nesting



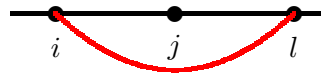
Upper joining



Lower joining

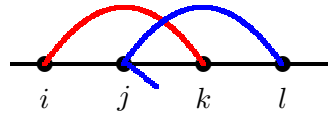


Upper pseudo-nesting

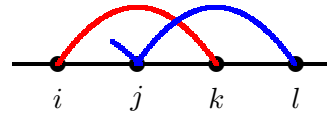


Lower pseudo-nesting

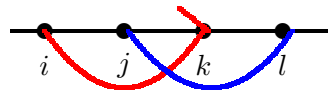
Figure 2: Crossing, nesting, joining and pseudo-nesting.



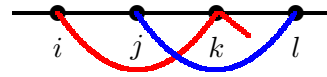
Upper crossing of type cval



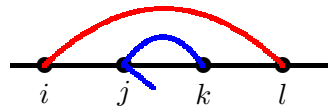
Upper crossing of type cdrise



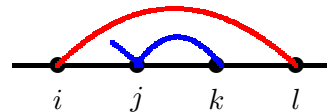
Lower crossing of type cpeak



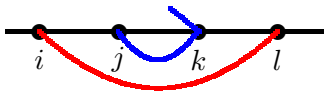
Lower crossing of type cdfall



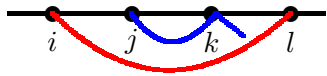
Upper nesting of type cval



Upper nesting of type cdrise



Lower nesting of type cpeak



Lower nesting of type cdfall

Figure 3: Refined categories of crossing and nesting.

- *lower nesting of type cpeak* (lnestcpeak) if $i = \sigma(l)$ and $j = \sigma(k)$ and $\sigma^{-1}(k) < k$;
- *lower nesting of type cdfall* (lnestcdfall) if $i = \sigma(l)$ and $j = \sigma(k)$ and $\sigma^{-1}(k) > k$.

See Figure 3. Please note that for the “upper” quantities the distinguished index (i.e. the one for which we examine both σ and σ^{-1}) is in second position (j), while for the “lower” quantities the distinguished index is in third position (k).

The master polynomial encoding all these statistics (but no others yet) is

$$\begin{aligned}
P_n(p_{+1}, p_{+2}, p_{-1}, p_{-2}, q_{+1}, q_{+2}, q_{-1}, q_{-2}, r_+, r_-, s) = \\
\sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} p_{+1}^{\text{ucrosscval}(\sigma)} p_{+2}^{\text{ucrosscdrise}(\sigma)} p_{-1}^{\text{lcrosscpeak}(\sigma)} p_{-2}^{\text{lcrosscdfall}(\sigma)} \times \\
q_{+1}^{\text{unestcval}(\sigma)} q_{+2}^{\text{unestcdrise}(\sigma)} q_{-1}^{\text{lnestcpeak}(\sigma)} q_{-2}^{\text{lnestcdfall}(\sigma)} \times \\
r_+^{\text{ujoin}(\sigma)} r_-^{\text{ljoin}(\sigma)} s^{\text{psnest}(\sigma)}. \tag{2.45}
\end{aligned}$$

It turns out that these 11-variable polynomials have a beautiful J-fraction:

Theorem 2.5 (J-fraction for crossing and nesting statistics). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials P_n defined by (2.45) has the J-type continued fraction*

$$\begin{aligned}
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(p_{+1}, p_{+2}, p_{-1}, p_{-2}, q_{+1}, q_{+2}, q_{-1}, q_{-2}, r_+, r_-, s) t^n = \\
\frac{1}{1 - t - \frac{t^2}{1 - (r_+ + r_- + s)t - \frac{[2]_{p_{+1}, q_{+1}} [2]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} t^2}{1 - ([2]_{p_{+2}, q_{+2}} r_+ + [2]_{p_{-2}, q_{-2}} r_- + s^2)t - \frac{[3]_{p_{+1}, q_{+1}} [3]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} t^2}{1 - \dots}}}}}} \tag{2.46}
\end{aligned}$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_n = [n]_{p_{+2}, q_{+2}} r_+ + [n]_{p_{-2}, q_{-2}} r_- + s^n \tag{2.47a}$$

$$\beta_n = [n]_{p_{+1}, q_{+1}} [n]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} \tag{2.47b}$$

We will prove this theorem in Section 6.1, as a special case of a more general result.

The continued fraction (2.46)/(2.47) of course has the symmetry $(p_{+1}, p_{+2}, q_{+1}, q_{+2}, r_+) \leftrightarrow (p_{-1}, p_{-2}, q_{-1}, q_{-2}, r_-)$, which is obvious from the definition (2.45) by considering the bijection $\sigma \mapsto \sigma^{-1}$. Less trivially, it has the four separate symmetries $p_{+1} \leftrightarrow q_{+1}$, $p_{+2} \leftrightarrow q_{+2}$, $p_{-1} \leftrightarrow q_{-1}$ and $p_{-2} \leftrightarrow q_{-2}$; it would be interesting to understand these combinatorially.

If one tries to expand the generating function (2.46) into an S-fraction, one obtains coefficients α_n that are rational functions rather than polynomials (starting at $n = 4$). But under the specialization

$$p_{+1} = p_{+2}, \quad q_{+1} = q_{+2}, \quad r_+ = 1, \quad r_- = p_{-1} = p_{-2}, \quad s = q_{-1} = q_{-2}, \tag{2.48}$$

the J-fraction (2.46)/(2.47) does arise as the contraction (1.3) of an S-fraction with polynomial coefficients:

Corollary 2.6 (S-fraction for crossing and nesting statistics). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials P_n defined by (2.45), under the specialization (2.48), has the S-type continued fraction*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(p_+, p_+, p_-, p_-, q_+, q_+, q_-, q_-, 1, p_-, q_-) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{t}{1 - \frac{t}{1 - \frac{[2]_{p_-, q_-} t}{1 - \frac{[2]_{p_+, q_+} t}{1 - \dots}}}}}$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = [k]_{p_-, q_-} \quad (2.49a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = [k]_{p_+, q_+} \quad (2.49b)$$

Remark. We could of course interchange + and - everywhere, i.e. set

$$p_{-1} = p_{-2}, \quad q_{-1} = q_{-2}, \quad r_- = 1, \quad r_+ = p_{+1} = p_{+2}, \quad s = q_{+1} = q_{+2}, \quad (2.50)$$

and obtain $\alpha_{2k-1} = [k]_{p_+, q_+}$, $\alpha_{2k} = [k]_{p_-, q_-}$. ■

The next step is to try to include the variables x, y, u, v from (2.4) — or more ambitiously, the variables $x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, z, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, w$ from (2.19); or yet more ambitiously, the variables $x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w}$ from (2.23). Amazingly, this latter program works. Let us define the polynomial

$$\begin{aligned} Q_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w}, p_{+1}, p_{+2}, p_{-1}, p_{-2}, q_{+1}, q_{+2}, q_{-1}, q_{-2}, s) = \\ \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x_1^{\text{eareccpeak}(\sigma)} x_2^{\text{eareccdfall}(\sigma)} y_1^{\text{ereccval}(\sigma)} y_2^{\text{ereccdrise}(\sigma)} \times \\ u_1^{\text{nrcpeak}(\sigma)} u_2^{\text{nrcdfall}(\sigma)} v_1^{\text{nrcval}(\sigma)} v_2^{\text{nrcdrise}(\sigma)} \mathbf{w}^{\text{fix}(\sigma)} \times \\ p_{+1}^{\text{ucrosscval}(\sigma)} p_{+2}^{\text{ucrosscdrise}(\sigma)} p_{-1}^{\text{lcrosscpeak}(\sigma)} p_{-2}^{\text{lcrosscdfall}(\sigma)} \times \\ q_{+1}^{\text{unestcval}(\sigma)} q_{+2}^{\text{unestcdrise}(\sigma)} q_{-1}^{\text{lnestcpeak}(\sigma)} q_{-2}^{\text{lnestcdfall}(\sigma)} s^{\text{psnest}(\sigma)}. \quad (2.51) \end{aligned}$$

(We have omitted r_+ and r_- since they are redundant in view of $\text{ujoin} = \text{cdrise}$ and $\text{ljoin} = \text{cdfall}$.) We then have a beautiful J-fraction that simultaneously generalizes Theorems 2.2 and 2.5:

Theorem 2.7 (First J-fraction for permutations, p, q -generalization). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials Q_n defined by (2.51) has the J-type continued*

fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} Q_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w}, p_{+1}, p_{+2}, p_{-1}, p_{-2}, q_{+1}, q_{+2}, q_{-1}, q_{-2}, s) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - w_0 t - \frac{x_1 y_1 t^2}{1 - (x_2 + y_2 + s w_1) t - \frac{(p_{-1} x_1 + q_{-1} u_1)(p_{+1} y_1 + q_{+1} v_1) t^2}{1 - (p_{-2} x_2 + q_{-2} u_2 + p_{+2} y_2 + q_{+2} v_2 + s^2 w_2) t - \frac{(p_{-1}^2 x_1 + q_{-1} [2]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} u_1)(p_{+1}^2 y_1 + q_{+1} [2]_{p_{+1}, q_{+1}} v_1) t^2}{1 - \dots}}}}}} \quad (2.52)$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_0 = w_0 \quad (2.53a)$$

$$\gamma_n = (p_{-2}^{n-1} x_2 + q_{-2} [n-1]_{p_{-2}, q_{-2}} u_2) + (p_{+2}^{n-1} y_2 + q_{+2} [n-1]_{p_{+2}, q_{+2}} v_2) + s^n w_n \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (2.53b)$$

$$\beta_n = (p_{-1}^{n-1} x_1 + q_{-1} [n-1]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} u_1) (p_{+1}^{n-1} y_1 + q_{+1} [n-1]_{p_{+1}, q_{+1}} v_1) \quad (2.53c)$$

We will prove this theorem in Section 6.1, as a special case of a more general result.

Remarks. 1. The continued fraction (2.52) shows that Q_n depends on its arguments only via the combinations (2.53a,b,c): in particular, it is symmetric under $(x_1, u_1, p_{-1}, q_{-1}) \leftrightarrow (y_1, v_1, p_{+1}, q_{+1})$ and independently under $(x_2, u_2, p_{-2}, q_{-2}) \leftrightarrow (y_2, v_2, p_{+2}, q_{+2})$. It would be interesting to try to understand combinatorially (directly at the level of permutations) why these properties hold. The symmetry of Q_n under the simultaneous application of *both* of these interchanges is an immediate consequence of the bijection $\sigma \mapsto R \circ \sigma \circ R$ with $R(i) = n + 1 - i$, which interchanges cycle peaks with cycle valleys, cycle double rises with cycle double falls, and records with antirecords (while preserving the number of fixed points at each level). But the more specific properties encoded in (2.53) remain mysterious.

2. Please note that when $x_1 = u_1$, then $p_{-1}^{n-1} x_1 + q_{-1} [n-1]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} u_1$ simplifies to $[n]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} x_1$, which has the symmetry $p_{-1} \leftrightarrow q_{-1}$; and similarly when $x_2 = u_2$, $y_1 = v_1$ or $y_2 = v_2$. It would be interesting to understand combinatorially why these symmetries hold. If we make all four of these specializations (i.e. forgo taking account of record statistics), then the coefficients (2.53) simplify to

$$\gamma_n = [n]_{p_{-2}, q_{-2}} x_2 + [n]_{p_{+2}, q_{+2}} y_2 + s^n w_n \quad (2.54a)$$

$$\beta_n = [n]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} [n]_{p_{+1}, q_{+1}} x_1 y_1 \quad (2.54b)$$

3. Once one includes the detailed classification of fixed points according to their level (2.20), the variable s becomes redundant: it simply sends $w_\ell \rightarrow s^\ell w_\ell$. This reflects the fact that

$$\text{psnest}(\sigma) = \sum_{j \in \text{fix}} \text{lev}(j, \sigma). \quad (2.55)$$

■

Some historical remarks. 1. The pioneering work on crossings and nestings in permutations is that of Corteel [29], and our presentation is strongly inspired by hers. However, her definitions of crossings and nestings are less refined than ours, and also partly asymmetrical between “upper” and “lower” (i.e. between σ and σ^{-1}): she defines

$$\text{cross}(\sigma) = \text{ucross}(\sigma) + \text{lcross}(\sigma) + \text{ujoin}(\sigma) \quad (2.56a)$$

$$\text{nest}(\sigma) = \text{unest}(\sigma) + \text{lnest}(\sigma) + \text{psnest}(\sigma) \quad (2.56b)$$

and subsequent workers [60, 62, 91, 92] have followed her in this definition. Here $\text{nest}(\sigma) = \text{nest}(\sigma^{-1})$ by (2.44); but $\text{cross}(\sigma) \neq \text{cross}(\sigma^{-1})$ in general, because of the appearance of ujoin without ljoin in (2.56a). Corteel [29] obtained the special case of Theorem 2.7 with three variables y, p, q , where $x_1 = x_2 = u_1 = u_2 = 1$, $y_1 = v_1 = w_\ell = y$, $p_{+1} = p_{+2} = p_{-1} = p_{-2} = p$, $y_2 = v_2 = py$, $q_{+1} = q_{+2} = q_{-1} = q_{-2} = s = q$.¹³ Some refinements of this result were obtained by Shin and Zeng [91, 92].

2. Our refined categories of crossing and nesting are inspired by the “octabasic” permutation polynomials of Simion and Stanton [95, Theorem 2.2].

3. Shortly after completing the proof of Theorem 2.7, we discovered that these ideas were anticipated two decades ago in a remarkable but apparently little-known paper of Randrianarivony [83].¹⁴ In this paper, which was also inspired in part by the work of Simion and Stanton [94, 95], Randrianarivony [83, Théorème 1] *almost* obtained our full Theorem 2.7: he had all our variables except \mathbf{w} and s . That is, he included all our statistics except the classification of fixed points by level.

One reason for the unfortunate neglect of Randrianarivony’s work may be that it was written in French. Another reason may be that he did not write *explicitly* any continued fraction, contenting himself with an assertion [83, Théorème 1] about the moment sequence associated to the orthogonal polynomials satisfying a particular three-term recurrence. But in the introduction to his paper he stated explicitly [83, p. 507] that “Le problème est alors équivalent à la donnée d’une interprétation des coefficients du développement de Taylor de la J-fraction continue avec les paramètres b_n et λ_n .”

4. A very recent paper of Blitvić and Steingrímsson [12] also contains a large part of Theorem 2.7, namely, the specialization $x_1 = u_1$, $x_2 = u_2$, $y_1 = v_1$, $y_2 = v_2$, $w_\ell = w \forall \ell$ [12, Theorem 1]. That is, they have included all the cycle statistics and the refined crossing-and-nesting statistics (including the pseudo-nesting statistic), but not the record statistics or the detailed classification of fixed points by level. As a result, they obtained the J-fraction with coefficients (2.54).

5. Some other q -versions, involving the number of inversions in σ , were obtained two decades ago by one of us [108, 110] and recently by Elizalde [42, eqn. (4)]. All of these are special cases of Theorem 2.7 (or its S-fraction corollary, Theorem 2.8 below), as we explain in Section 2.16. ■

¹³ Her usage of the variables p and q is the reverse of ours — i.e. she writes $q^{\text{cross}(\sigma)}p^{\text{nest}(\sigma)}$ — but this does not matter in comparing her formulae to ours, because in her specialization the formulae are anyway symmetric between p and q .

¹⁴ According to the Web of Science, the paper [83] has been cited only once [63].

2.6 p, q -generalizations of the first S-fraction

It turns out that suitable specializations of the J-fraction (2.52)/(2.53) can be obtained as the contraction (1.3) of an S-fraction with polynomial coefficients. We make the specializations

$$x_1 = x \quad (2.57a)$$

$$x_2 = p_- x \quad (2.57b)$$

$$y_1 = y_2 = y \quad (2.57c)$$

$$u_1 = u \quad (2.57d)$$

$$u_2 = p_- u \quad (2.57e)$$

$$v_1 = v_2 = v \quad (2.57f)$$

$$w_0 = x \quad (2.57g)$$

$$w_\ell = u \quad \text{for } \ell \geq 1 \quad (2.57h)$$

$$p_{+1} = p_{+2} = p_+ \quad (2.57i)$$

$$p_{-1} = p_{-2} = p_- \quad (2.57j)$$

$$q_{+1} = q_{+2} = q_+ \quad (2.57k)$$

$$q_{-1} = q_{-2} = q_- \quad (2.57l)$$

$$s = q_- \quad (2.57m)$$

[which include (2.48) as the special case $x = y = u = v = 1$]. The polynomial Q_n defined in (2.51) then reduces to the eight-variable polynomial

$$P_n(x, y, u, v, p_+, p_-, q_+, q_-) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x^{\text{arec}(\sigma)} y^{\text{erec}(\sigma)} u^{n - \text{exc}(\sigma) - \text{arec}(\sigma)} v^{\text{exc}(\sigma) - \text{erec}(\sigma)} \times \\ p_+^{\text{ucross}(\sigma)} p_-^{\text{lcross}(\sigma) + \text{ljoin}(\sigma)} q_+^{\text{unest}(\sigma)} q_-^{\text{lnest}(\sigma) + \text{psnest}(\sigma)}. \quad (2.58)$$

and the coefficients (2.53) reduce to

$$\gamma_0 = x \quad (2.59a)$$

$$\gamma_n = (p_-^n x + q_- [n]_{p_-, q_-} u) + (p_+^{n-1} y + q_+ [n-1]_{p_+, q_+} v) \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (2.59b)$$

$$\beta_n = (p_-^{n-1} x + q_- [n-1]_{p_-, q_-} u) (p_+^{n-1} y + q_+ [n-1]_{p_+, q_+} v) \quad (2.59c)$$

Therefore, the J-fraction (2.52)/(2.53) with the specializations (2.57) is the contraction (1.3) of the following S-fraction:

Theorem 2.8 (First S-fraction for permutations, p, q -generalization). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials P_n defined by (2.58) has the S-type continued*

fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(x, y, u, v, p_+, p_-, q_+, q_-) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{yt}{1 - \frac{(p_-x + q_-u)t}{1 - \frac{(p_+y + q_+v)t}{1 - \frac{(p_-^2x + q_- [2]_{p_-, q_-} u)t}{1 - \frac{(p_+^2y + q_+ [2]_{p_+, q_+} v)t}{1 - \dots}}}}}}}} \quad (2.60)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = p_-^{k-1}x + q_- [k-1]_{p_-, q_-} u \quad (2.61a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = p_+^{k-1}y + q_+ [k-1]_{p_+, q_+} v \quad (2.61b)$$

Note that the polynomial $P_n(x, y, u, v, p_+, p_-, q_+, q_-)$ reduces to $P_n(x, y, u, v)$ [cf. (2.2)/(2.4)] if we set $p_+ = p_- = q_+ = q_- = 1$, and to $P_n(p_+, p_+, p_-, p_-, q_+, q_+, q_-, q_-, 1, p_-, q_-)$ [cf. (2.45)/(2.48)] if we set $x = y = u = v = 1$. So Theorem 2.8 simultaneously generalizes Theorem 2.1(a) and Corollary 2.6.

One other interesting specialization of Theorem 2.8 is

$$P_n(x, qy, 1, q, q, q, q^2, q^2) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x^{\text{arcc}(\sigma)} y^{\text{erec}(\sigma)} q^{\text{inv}(\sigma)}, \quad (2.62)$$

where $\text{inv}(\sigma)$ is the inversion number (see Section 2.16 below); this formula follows from (2.58) and (2.141a). The corresponding continued fraction (2.60)/(2.61) was found in [108] and has coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = q^{k-1} (x + q + \dots + q^{k-1}) \quad (2.63a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = q^k (y + q + \dots + q^{k-1}) \quad (2.63b)$$

As one might expect by analogy with (2.16), the corresponding ordinary generating function (2.60) can be written as a ratio of basic hypergeometric functions ${}_2\phi_0$, which are defined by [56, pp. 4–5]

$${}_2\phi_0 \left(\begin{matrix} a, b \\ - \end{matrix} ; q, z \right) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(a; q)_n (b; q)_n}{(q; q)_n} (-1)^n q^{-n(n-1)/2} z^n \quad (2.64)$$

and can be related to the Heine hypergeometric function ${}_2\phi_1$,

$${}_2\phi_1 \left(\begin{matrix} a, b \\ c \end{matrix} ; q, z \right) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(a; q)_n (b; q)_n}{(c; q)_n (q; q)_n} z^n, \quad (2.65)$$

either as a limiting case

$${}_2\phi_0\left(\begin{matrix} a, b \\ _ \end{matrix}; q, z\right) = \lim_{c \rightarrow \infty} {}_2\phi_1\left(\begin{matrix} a, b \\ c \end{matrix}; q, cz\right) \quad (2.66)$$

or as a specialization to $c = 0$:

$${}_2\phi_0\left(\begin{matrix} a, b \\ _ \end{matrix}; q, z\right) = {}_2\phi_1\left(\begin{matrix} a^{-1}, b^{-1} \\ 0 \end{matrix}; q^{-1}, abq^{-1}z\right). \quad (2.67)$$

Starting from Heine's [58] continued fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_2\phi_1$ [68, pp. 318–322] [30, p. 395],

$$\frac{{}_2\phi_1\left(\begin{matrix} a, bq \\ cq \end{matrix}; q, z\right)}{{}_2\phi_1\left(\begin{matrix} a, b \\ c \end{matrix}; q, z\right)} = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\alpha_1 z}{1 - \frac{\alpha_2 z}{1 - \dots}}} \quad (2.68)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = \frac{(1 - aq^{k-1})(b - cq^{k-1})q^{k-1}}{(1 - cq^{2k-2})(1 - cq^{2k-1})} \quad (2.69a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = \frac{(1 - bq^k)(a - cq^k)q^{k-1}}{(1 - cq^{2k-1})(1 - cq^{2k})} \quad (2.69b)$$

and applying either (2.66) or (2.67), we obtain a continued fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_2\phi_0$:

$$\frac{{}_2\phi_0\left(\begin{matrix} a, bq \\ _ \end{matrix}; q, q^{-1}z\right)}{{}_2\phi_0\left(\begin{matrix} a, b \\ _ \end{matrix}; q, z\right)} = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\alpha_1 z}{1 - \frac{\alpha_2 z}{1 - \dots}}} \quad (2.70)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = -(1 - aq^{k-1})q^{-(2k-1)} \quad (2.71a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = -(1 - bq^k)q^{-2k} \quad (2.71b)$$

The continued fraction (2.63) can then be obtained from (2.70)/(2.71) by setting

$$a = r^{-1}[r + (1 - r)x] \quad (2.72a)$$

$$b = r + (1 - r)y \quad (2.72b)$$

$$q = r^{-1} \quad (2.72c)$$

$$z = \frac{t}{1 - r} \quad (2.72d)$$

and then renaming $r \leftarrow q$.

Remark. There is an alternative specialization of (2.52)/(2.53), generalizing (2.50), in which $+$ and $-$ are interchanged compared to (2.57), and in which also the roles of (x, u) and (y, v) are interchanged:

$$x_1 = x_2 = x \tag{2.73a}$$

$$y_1 = y \tag{2.73b}$$

$$y_2 = p_+ y \tag{2.73c}$$

$$u_1 = u_2 = u \tag{2.73d}$$

$$v_1 = v \tag{2.73e}$$

$$v_2 = p_+ v \tag{2.73f}$$

$$w_0 = y \tag{2.73g}$$

$$w_\ell = v \quad \text{for } \ell \geq 1 \tag{2.73h}$$

$$p_{+1} = p_{+2} = p_+ \tag{2.73i}$$

$$p_{-1} = p_{-2} = p_- \tag{2.73j}$$

$$q_{+1} = q_{+2} = q_+ \tag{2.73k}$$

$$q_{-1} = q_{-2} = q_- \tag{2.73l}$$

$$s = q_+ \tag{2.73m}$$

The resulting S-fraction then has the coefficients (2.61) but with $(x, u, p_-, q_-) \leftrightarrow (y, v, p_+, q_+)$. This is also a consequence of the bijection $\sigma \mapsto R \circ \sigma \circ R$ with $R(i) = n + 1 - i$, which interchanges cycle peaks with cycle valleys, cycle double rises with cycle double falls, records with antirecords, and upper with lower. ■

2.7 First master J-fraction

Let us now return to the J-fraction of Theorem 2.7, with its 17 indeterminates (or 16 if we exclude the redundant variable s) plus the infinite collection \mathbf{w} . It turns out that this is by no means the end of the story. Indeed, we can go much farther, and obtain a polynomial in five infinite families of indeterminates $\mathbf{a} = (\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{b} = (\mathbf{b}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{c} = (\mathbf{c}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{d} = (\mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{e} = (\mathbf{e}_\ell)_{\ell \geq 0}$ that will have a nice J-fraction and that will include the polynomial (2.51) as a specialization.¹⁵ The basic idea is that, rather than counting the *total* numbers of quadruplets $i < j < k < l$ that form upper (resp. lower) crossings or nestings, we should instead count the number of upper (resp. lower) crossings or nestings that use a particular vertex j (resp. k) in second (resp. third) position, and then attribute weights to the vertex j (resp. k) depending on those values.

¹⁵ In our original version of this master J-fraction, the weights $\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}$ were factorized in the form $\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'} = \mathbf{a}_\ell^{(1)} \mathbf{a}_{\ell'}^{(2)}$, etc. We thank Andrew Elvey Price for suggesting the generalization in which this factorization is avoided.

More precisely, we define

$$\text{ucross}(j, \sigma) = \#\{i < j < k < l : k = \sigma(i) \text{ and } l = \sigma(j)\} \quad (2.74a)$$

$$\text{unest}(j, \sigma) = \#\{i < j < k < l : k = \sigma(j) \text{ and } l = \sigma(i)\} \quad (2.74b)$$

$$\text{lcross}(k, \sigma) = \#\{i < j < k < l : i = \sigma(k) \text{ and } j = \sigma(l)\} \quad (2.74c)$$

$$\text{lnest}(k, \sigma) = \#\{i < j < k < l : i = \sigma(l) \text{ and } j = \sigma(k)\} \quad (2.74d)$$

Note that $\text{ucross}(j, \sigma)$ and $\text{unest}(j, \sigma)$ can be nonzero only when j is a cycle valley or a cycle double rise, while $\text{lcross}(k, \sigma)$ and $\text{lnest}(k, \sigma)$ can be nonzero only when k is a cycle peak or a cycle double fall. And we obviously have

$$\text{ucrosscval}(\sigma) = \sum_{j \in \text{cval}} \text{ucross}(j, \sigma) \quad (2.75)$$

and analogously for the other seven crossing/nesting quantities defined in Section 2.5. Recall, finally, the definition (2.20) of the level of a fixed point j :

$$\text{lev}(j, \sigma) = \#\{i < j < l : l = \sigma(i)\} = \#\{i < j < l : i = \sigma(l)\}. \quad (2.76)$$

We now introduce five infinite families of indeterminates $\mathbf{a} = (\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{b} = (\mathbf{b}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{c} = (\mathbf{c}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{d} = (\mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{e} = (\mathbf{e}_{\ell})_{\ell \geq 0}$ and define the polynomial $Q_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ by

$$\begin{aligned} Q_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) = & \\ & \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} \prod_{i \in \text{cval}} \mathbf{a}_{\text{ucross}(i, \sigma), \text{unest}(i, \sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{cpeak}} \mathbf{b}_{\text{lcross}(i, \sigma), \text{lnest}(i, \sigma)} \times \\ & \prod_{i \in \text{cdfall}} \mathbf{c}_{\text{lcross}(i, \sigma), \text{lnest}(i, \sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{cdrise}} \mathbf{d}_{\text{ucross}(i, \sigma), \text{unest}(i, \sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{fix}} \mathbf{e}_{\text{lev}(i, \sigma)}. \end{aligned} \quad (2.77)$$

These polynomials then have a beautiful J-fraction:

Theorem 2.9 (First master J-fraction for permutations). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials $Q_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ has the J-type continued fraction*

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} Q_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) t^n = & \\ & \frac{1}{1 - \mathbf{e}_0 t - \frac{\mathbf{a}_{00} \mathbf{b}_{00} t^2}{1 - (\mathbf{c}_{00} + \mathbf{d}_{00} + \mathbf{e}_1) t - \frac{(\mathbf{a}_{01} + \mathbf{a}_{10})(\mathbf{b}_{01} + \mathbf{b}_{10}) t^2}{1 - (\mathbf{c}_{01} + \mathbf{c}_{10} + \mathbf{d}_{01} + \mathbf{d}_{10} + \mathbf{e}_2) t - \frac{(\mathbf{a}_{02} + \mathbf{a}_{11} + \mathbf{a}_{20})(\mathbf{b}_{02} + \mathbf{b}_{11} + \mathbf{b}_{20}) t^2}{1 - \dots}}}} \end{aligned} \quad (2.78)$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_n = \mathbf{c}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{d}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{e}_n \quad (2.79a)$$

$$\beta_n = \mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* \quad (2.79b)$$

where

$$\mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} \mathbf{a}_{\ell, n-1-\ell} \quad (2.80)$$

and likewise for $\mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}$.

We will prove this theorem in Section 6.1. It is our “master theorem” for permutations, from which most of the others (namely, all those not including the statistic cyc) can be derived.

Remark. It seems far from obvious (at least to us) why $Q_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ depends on $\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}$ only via the combinations (2.79a,b). Even some partial cases of this — e.g. the fact that the dependence on \mathbf{c} and \mathbf{d} is only via their sum $\mathbf{c} + \mathbf{d}$ — seem nontrivial. Of course, this behavior is a consequence of the bijection onto labeled Motzkin paths that we will use in Section 6.1 to prove Theorem 2.9. But it would be interesting to understand it combinatorially, directly at the level of permutations. ■

Let us now show how to recover $Q_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w}, p_{+1}, p_{+2}, p_{-1}, p_{-2}, q_{+1}, q_{+2}, q_{-1}, q_{-2}, s)$ as a specialization of $Q_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$, and thereby obtain Theorem 2.7 as a special case of Theorem 2.9. We need a simple lemma:

Lemma 2.10 (Records and antirecords in terms of nestings). *Let $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ and $i \in [n]$.*

- (a) *If i is a cycle valley or cycle double rise, then i is a record if and only if $\text{unest}(i, \sigma) = 0$; and in this case it is an exclusive record.*
- (b) *If i is a cycle peak or cycle double fall, then i is an antirecord if and only if $\text{lnest}(i, \sigma) = 0$; and in this case it is an exclusive antirecord.*

PROOF. (a) By hypothesis we have $\sigma(i) > i$. Then i fails to be a record if and only if there exists $j < i$ such that $\sigma(j) > \sigma(i)$; and by (2.74b) this is exactly the assertion that $\text{unest}(i, \sigma) > 0$. The final statement follows from the fact that every record-antirecord is a fixed point.

(b) is similar. □

In view of (2.55), (2.75) and Lemma 2.10, the specialization needed for obtaining

(2.51) from (2.77) is

$$\mathbf{a}_{\ell,\ell'} = p_{+1}^\ell q_{+1}^{\ell'} \times \begin{cases} y_1 & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ v_1 & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.81a)$$

$$\mathbf{b}_{\ell,\ell'} = p_{-1}^\ell q_{-1}^{\ell'} \times \begin{cases} x_1 & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ u_1 & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.81b)$$

$$\mathbf{c}_{\ell,\ell'} = p_{-2}^\ell q_{-2}^{\ell'} \times \begin{cases} x_2 & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ u_2 & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.81c)$$

$$\mathbf{d}_{\ell,\ell'} = p_{+2}^\ell q_{+2}^{\ell'} \times \begin{cases} y_2 & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ v_2 & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.81d)$$

$$\mathbf{e}_\ell = s^\ell w_\ell \quad (2.81e)$$

We then have

$$\mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* = p_{+1}^{n-1} y_1 + q_{+1} [n-1]_{p_{+1}, q_{+1}} v_1 \quad (2.82)$$

and similarly for \mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* , \mathbf{c}_{n-1}^* , \mathbf{d}_{n-1}^* , so that we obtain the weights (2.53) as a specialization of (2.79). This shows that Theorem 2.7 is a special case of Theorem 2.9.

Remark. After discovering and proving Theorem 2.9, we realized that Flajolet had, in a certain sense, anticipated these ideas already in his 1980 paper [48]! In [48, Proposition 7A] Flajolet gives the J-fraction for labeled Motzkin paths in which distinct weights are assigned to steps according to their type (rise, fall or level step), starting height h_{i-1} and label ξ_i (Theorem 5.3 below). So this is a general “master J-fraction” for labeled Motzkin paths, from which one need only pull back via a bijection to obtain master J-fractions for specific combinatorial objects (such as permutations). As will be seen in Section 6.1, our method for proving Theorem 2.9 is precisely this.

■

2.8 First master S-fraction

We can also obtain a master S-fraction by specializing the parameters in Theorem 2.9 and then applying the contraction formula (1.3). There are two possibilities, depending on whether we want the S-fraction to be “**a** first” or “**b** first”. Let us begin by showing the latter, as it meshes better with the specializations (2.81) and (2.57).

b first. The J-fraction (2.78)/(2.79) is the contraction (1.3) of the S-fraction

$$\frac{1}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{b}_{00}t}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{a}_{00}t}{1 - \frac{(\mathbf{b}_{01} + \mathbf{b}_{10})t}{1 - \frac{(\mathbf{a}_{01} + \mathbf{a}_{10})t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (2.83)$$

with coefficients $\alpha_{2k-1} = \mathbf{b}_{k-1}^*$ and $\alpha_{2k} = \mathbf{a}_{k-1}^*$ if we choose $\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}$ so that

$$\mathbf{c}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{d}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{e}_n = \mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{b}_n^* \quad \text{for all } n \geq 0 \quad (2.84)$$

[where of course $\mathbf{c}_{-1}^* = \mathbf{d}_{-1}^* = 0$ by the definition (2.80)]. Therefore:

Theorem 2.11 (First master S-fraction for permutations). *In the ring $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}]$, let \mathcal{I} be the ideal generated by the relations (2.84) for all $n \geq 0$. Then*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} Q_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{b}_{00}t}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{a}_{00}t}{1 - \frac{(\mathbf{b}_{01} + \mathbf{b}_{10})t}{1 - \frac{(\mathbf{a}_{01} + \mathbf{a}_{10})t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (2.85)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = \mathbf{b}_{k-1}^* \quad (2.86a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = \mathbf{a}_{k-1}^* \quad (2.86b)$$

as an identity in $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}]/\mathcal{I}$.

In applications we will specialize $\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}$ in such a way that the relations (2.84) hold. There are many ways of doing this; for instance, we could arrange to have

$$\mathbf{d}_{n-1}^* = \mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \quad \text{for all } n \geq 1 \quad (2.87a)$$

$$\mathbf{c}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{e}_n = \mathbf{b}_n^* \quad \text{for all } n \geq 0 \quad (2.87b)$$

(or alternatively the same thing with \mathbf{c} and \mathbf{d} interchanged). And this in turn can be done in many ways; the simplest way to have $\mathbf{d}_{n-1}^* = \mathbf{a}_{n-1}^*$ for all n is to have $\mathbf{d} = \mathbf{a}$ (that is, $\mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'} = \mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'}$ for all ℓ, ℓ').

In particular, we can obtain Theorem 2.8 in this way, by making the specializations (2.81) and (2.57): this leads to

$$\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'} = \mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'} = p_+^\ell q_+^{\ell'} \times \begin{cases} y & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ v & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.88a)$$

$$\mathbf{b}_{\ell, \ell'} = p_-^\ell q_-^{\ell'} \times \begin{cases} x & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ u & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.88b)$$

$$\mathbf{c}_{\ell, \ell'} = p_-^\ell q_-^{\ell'} \times \begin{cases} p_- x & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ p_- u & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.88c)$$

$$\mathbf{e}_\ell = q_-^\ell \times \begin{cases} x & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ u & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.88d)$$

and hence

$$\mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* = \mathbf{d}_{n-1}^* = p_+^{n-1}y + q_+ [n-1]_{p_+, q_+} v \quad (2.89a)$$

$$\mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* = p_-^{n-1}x + q_- [n-1]_{p_-, q_-} u \quad (2.89b)$$

$$\mathbf{c}_{n-1}^* = p_-^n x + p_- q_- [n-1]_{p_-, q_-} u \quad (2.89c)$$

The equation (2.87b) is then satisfied by virtue of (2.40). So Theorem 2.8 is a special case of Theorem 2.11. And Theorem 2.1(a) is the further special case obtained by setting $p_+ = p_- = q_+ = q_- = 1$.

a first. Completely analogous considerations show that the J-fraction (2.78)/(2.79) is the contraction (1.3) of the S-fraction

$$\frac{1}{1 - \frac{a_{00}t}{1 - \frac{b_{00}t}{1 - \frac{(a_{01} + a_{10})t}{1 - \frac{(b_{01} + b_{10})t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (2.90)$$

with coefficients $\alpha_{2k-1} = \mathbf{a}_{k-1}^*$ and $\alpha_{2k} = \mathbf{b}_{k-1}^*$ if we choose $\mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}$ so that

$$\mathbf{c}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{d}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{e}_n = \mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{a}_n^* \quad \text{for all } n \geq 0. \quad (2.91)$$

This leads to an analogue of Theorem 2.11 in which the roles of \mathbf{a} and \mathbf{b} are interchanged. And one special case of this is obtained from (2.81) and (2.73).

2.9 p, q -generalizations of the second J-fraction

We can also make a p, q -generalization of the second J-fraction involving cyc (Section 2.4). Let us define the polynomial

$$\begin{aligned} \widehat{Q}_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, v_1, v_2, \mathbf{w}, p_{+1}, p_{+2}, p_{-1}, p_{-2}, q_{+1}, q_{+2}, q_{-1}, q_{-2}, s, \lambda) = \\ \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x_1^{\text{eareccpeak}(\sigma)} x_2^{\text{eareccdfall}(\sigma)} y_1^{\text{ereccval}(\sigma)} y_2^{\text{ereccdrise}(\sigma)} \times \\ u_1^{\text{nrcpeak}(\sigma)} u_2^{\text{nrcdfall}(\sigma)} v_1^{\text{nrcval}(\sigma)} v_2^{\text{nrcdrise}(\sigma)} \mathbf{w}^{\mathbf{fix}(\sigma)} \times \\ p_{+1}^{\text{ucrosscval}(\sigma)} p_{+2}^{\text{ucrosscdrise}(\sigma)} p_{-1}^{\text{lcrosscpeak}(\sigma)} p_{-2}^{\text{lcrosscdfall}(\sigma)} \times \\ q_{+1}^{\text{unestcval}(\sigma)} q_{+2}^{\text{unestcdrise}(\sigma)} q_{-1}^{\text{lnestcpeak}(\sigma)} q_{-2}^{\text{lnestcdfall}(\sigma)} s^{\text{psnest}(\sigma)} \lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)}, \quad (2.92) \end{aligned}$$

which extends (2.51) by including the factor $\lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)}$. We refrain from attempting to generalize Conjecture 2.3, and simply limit ourselves to stating the p, q -generalization of Theorem 2.4 that we are able to prove. It turns out that we need to make the specializations $v_1 = y_1$, $v_2 = y_2$, $q_{+1} = p_{+1}$ and $q_{+2} = p_{+2}$. The result is therefore the following:

Theorem 2.12 (Second J-fraction for permutations, p, q -generalization). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials \widehat{Q}_n specialized to $v_1 = y_1$, $v_2 = y_2$, $q_{+1} = p_{+1}$, $q_{+2} = p_{+2}$ has the J-type continued fraction*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \widehat{Q}_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, y_1, y_2, \mathbf{w}, p_{+1}, p_{+2}, p_{-1}, p_{-2}, p_{+1}, p_{+2}, q_{-1}, q_{-2}, s, \lambda) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \lambda w_0 t - \frac{\lambda x_1 y_1 t^2}{1 - (x_2 + y_2 + \lambda s w_1) t - \frac{(\lambda + 1)(p_{-1} x_1 + q_{-1} u_1) p_{+1} y_1 t^2}{1 - (p_{-2} x_2 + 2p_{+2} y_2 + q_{-2} u_2 + \lambda s^2 w_2) t - \frac{(\lambda + 2)(p_{-1}^2 x_1 + q_{-1} [2]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} u_1) p_{+1}^2 y_1 t^2}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.93)$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_0 = \lambda w_0 \quad (2.94a)$$

$$\gamma_n = (p_{-2}^{n-1} x_2 + q_{-2} [n-1]_{p_{-2}, q_{-2}} u_2) + n p_{+2}^{n-1} y_2 + \lambda s^n w_n \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (2.94b)$$

$$\beta_n = (\lambda + n - 1) (p_{-1}^{n-1} x_1 + q_{-1} [n-1]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} u_1) p_{+1}^{n-1} y_1 \quad (2.94c)$$

We will prove this theorem in Section 6.2, as a special case of a more general result.

Remarks. 1. This J-fraction is not invariant under the reversal $R(i) = n + 1 - i$, because we have made specializations affecting cval and cdrise (namely, $v_1 = y_1$, $v_2 = y_2$, $q_{+1} = p_{+1}$, $q_{+2} = p_{+2}$) but have not made the analogous specializations for cpeak and cdfall (that is, $u_1 = x_1$, $u_2 = x_2$, $q_{-1} = p_{-1}$, $q_{-2} = p_{-2}$). However, if we do make also the latter specializations, then the coefficients (2.94) simplify to

$$\gamma_n = n p_{-2}^{n-1} x_2 + n p_{+2}^{n-1} y_2 + \lambda s^n w_n \quad (2.95a)$$

$$\beta_n = n (\lambda + n - 1) p_{-1}^{n-1} p_{+1}^{n-1} x_1 y_1 \quad (2.95b)$$

which are now invariant under the simultaneous interchange $(x_1, x_2, p_{-1}, p_{-2}) \leftrightarrow (y_1, y_2, p_{+1}, p_{+2})$.

2. It is curious to observe that the second J-fraction (2.93)/(2.94) can be obtained as a specialization of the first J-fraction (2.52)/(2.53): namely, we specialize $v_1 = y_1$, $v_2 = y_2$, $q_{+1} = p_{+1}$, $q_{+2} = p_{+2}$ and then make the substitutions $y_1 \leftarrow \lambda y_1$, $v_1 \leftarrow y_1$, $w_\ell \leftarrow \lambda w_\ell$. It would be interesting to understand this identity directly at the level of the polynomials Q_n [cf. (2.51)] and \widehat{Q}_n [cf. (2.92)]. ■

2.10 p, q -generalizations of the second S-fraction

It turns out that suitable specializations of the J-fraction (2.93)/(2.94) can be obtained as the contraction (1.3) of an S-fraction with polynomial coefficients. It

suffices to make the specializations

$$x_1 = x_2 = x \quad (2.96a)$$

$$y_1 = y \quad (2.96b)$$

$$y_2 = p_+ y \quad (2.96c)$$

$$u_1 = u_2 = u \quad (2.96d)$$

$$w_\ell = y \quad \text{for all } \ell \geq 0 \quad (2.96e)$$

$$p_{+1} = p_{+2} = p_+ \quad (2.96f)$$

$$p_{-1} = p_{-2} = p_- \quad (2.96g)$$

$$q_{-1} = q_{-2} = q_- \quad (2.96h)$$

$$s = p_+ \quad (2.96i)$$

The polynomial \widehat{Q}_n defined in (2.92) then reduces to the seven-variable polynomial

$$\begin{aligned} \widehat{P}_n(x, y, u, p_+, p_-, q_-, \lambda) = & \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x^{\text{earec}(\sigma)} y^{\text{wex}(\sigma)} u^{n - \text{earec}(\sigma) - \text{wex}(\sigma)} \times \\ & p_+^{\text{ucross}(\sigma) + \text{unest}(\sigma) + \text{ereccdrise}(\sigma) + \text{psnest}(\sigma)} p_-^{\text{lcross}(\sigma)} q_-^{\text{lnest}(\sigma)} \lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)}. \end{aligned} \quad (2.97)$$

It can then be checked that the J-fraction (2.93)/(2.94) with the specializations (2.96) is the contraction (1.3) of the following S-fraction:

Theorem 2.13 (Second S-fraction for permutations, p, q -generalization). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials \widehat{P}_n defined by (2.97) has the S-type continued fraction*

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \widehat{P}_n(x, y, u, p_+, p_-, q_-, \lambda) t^n = & \\ & \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\lambda y t}{1 - \frac{x t}{1 - \frac{(\lambda + 1) p_+ y t}{1 - \frac{(p_- x + q_- u) t}{1 - \frac{(\lambda + 2) p_+^2 y t}{1 - \frac{(p_-^2 x + q_- [2]_{p_-, q_-} u) t}{1 - \dots}}}}}}} \end{aligned} \quad (2.98)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = (\lambda + k - 1) p_+^{k-1} y \quad (2.99a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = p_-^{k-1} x + q_- [k - 1]_{p_-, q_-} u \quad (2.99b)$$

2.11 Second master J-fraction

As with the first J-fraction, we can go much farther, and obtain a J-fraction in infinitely many indeterminates. We again introduce five infinite families of indeterminates: $\mathbf{a} = (\mathbf{a}_\ell)_{\ell \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{b} = (\mathbf{b}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{c} = (\mathbf{c}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{d} = (\mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{e} = (\mathbf{e}_\ell)_{\ell \geq 0}$; please note that \mathbf{a} now has one index rather than two. We then define the polynomial $\widehat{Q}_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}, \lambda)$ by

$$\begin{aligned} \widehat{Q}_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}, \lambda) = & \\ & \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} \lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{cval}} \mathbf{a}_{\text{ucross}(i, \sigma) + \text{unest}(i, \sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{cpeak}} \mathbf{b}_{\text{lcross}(i, \sigma), \text{lnest}(i, \sigma)} \times \\ & \prod_{i \in \text{cdfall}} \mathbf{c}_{\text{lcross}(i, \sigma), \text{lnest}(i, \sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{cdrise}} \mathbf{d}_{\text{ucross}(i, \sigma) + \text{unest}(i, \sigma), \text{unest}(\sigma^{-1}(i), \sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{fix}} \mathbf{e}_{\text{lev}(i, \sigma)}. \end{aligned} \quad (2.100)$$

Note that here, in contrast to the first master J-fraction, \widehat{Q}_n depends on $\text{ucross}(i, \sigma)$ and $\text{unest}(i, \sigma)$ only via their sum (that is the price we have to pay in order to include the statistic cyc); and note also the somewhat bizarre appearance of $\text{unest}(\sigma^{-1}(i), \sigma)$ as the second index on \mathbf{d} . These polynomials have a nice J-fraction:

Theorem 2.14 (Second master J-fraction for permutations). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials $\widehat{Q}_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}, \lambda)$ has the J-type continued fraction*

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \widehat{Q}_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}, \lambda) t^n = & \\ & \frac{1}{1 - \lambda \mathbf{e}_0 t - \frac{\lambda \mathbf{a}_0 \mathbf{b}_{00} t^2}{1 - (\mathbf{c}_{00} + \mathbf{d}_{00} + \lambda \mathbf{e}_1) t - \frac{(\lambda + 1) \mathbf{a}_1 (\mathbf{b}_{01} + \mathbf{b}_{10}) t^2}{1 - (\mathbf{c}_{01} + \mathbf{c}_{10} + \mathbf{d}_{10} + \mathbf{d}_{11} + \lambda \mathbf{e}_2) t - \frac{(\lambda + 2) \mathbf{a}_2 (\mathbf{b}_{02} + \mathbf{b}_{11} + \mathbf{b}_{20}) t^2}{1 - \dots}}} \end{aligned} \quad (2.101)$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_n = \mathbf{c}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{d}_{n-1}^\natural + \lambda \mathbf{e}_n \quad (2.102a)$$

$$\beta_n = (\lambda + n - 1) \mathbf{a}_{n-1} \mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* \quad (2.102b)$$

where

$$\mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} \mathbf{b}_{\ell, n-1-\ell} \quad (2.103a)$$

$$\mathbf{c}_{n-1}^* \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} \mathbf{c}_{\ell, n-1-\ell} \quad (2.103b)$$

$$\mathbf{d}_{n-1}^\natural \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} \mathbf{d}_{n-1, \ell} \quad (2.103c)$$

We will prove this theorem in Section 6.2. It is our “master theorem” for permutation polynomials that include the statistic cyc .

Let us now show how to recover $\widehat{Q}_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, u_1, u_2, y_1, y_2, \mathbf{w}, p_{+1}, p_{+2}, p_{-1}, p_{-2}, p_{+1}, p_{+2}, q_{-1}, q_{-2}, s, \lambda)$ as a specialization of $\widehat{Q}_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$, and thereby obtain Theorem 2.12 as a special case of Theorem 2.14. In view of (2.55), (2.75) and Lemma 2.10, it suffices to set

$$\mathbf{a}_\ell = p_{+1}^\ell y_1 \quad (2.104a)$$

$$\mathbf{b}_{\ell, \ell'} = p_{-1}^\ell q_{-1}^{\ell'} \times \begin{cases} x_1 & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ u_1 & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.104b)$$

$$\mathbf{c}_{\ell, \ell'} = p_{-2}^\ell q_{-2}^{\ell'} \times \begin{cases} x_2 & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ u_2 & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (2.104c)$$

$$\mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'} = p_{+2}^\ell y_2 \quad (\text{no dependence on } \ell') \quad (2.104d)$$

$$\mathbf{e}_\ell = s^\ell w_\ell \quad (2.104e)$$

We then have

$$\mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* = p_{-1}^{n-1} x_1 + q_{-1} [n-1]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} u_1 \quad (2.105a)$$

$$\mathbf{c}_{n-1}^* = p_{-2}^{n-1} x_2 + q_{-2} [n-1]_{p_{-2}, q_{-2}} u_2 \quad (2.105b)$$

$$\mathbf{d}_{n-1}^\natural = n p_{+2}^{n-1} y_2 \quad (2.105c)$$

so that we obtain the weights (2.94) as a specialization of (2.102). This shows that Theorem 2.12 is a special case of Theorem 2.14.

2.12 Second master S-fraction

Analogously to what was done in Section 2.8 to obtain the first master S-fraction, we can also obtain a second master S-fraction by specializing the parameters in Theorem 2.14 and then applying the contraction formula (1.3). There are various ways in which this can be done, but the one that seems to us most natural goes as follows: From (2.102) we see that λ is associated with \mathbf{e} and with either \mathbf{a} or \mathbf{b} ; but since \mathbf{a} and \mathbf{e} are both singly-indexed, while \mathbf{b} is doubly-indexed, it seems most natural to set $\mathbf{a} = \mathbf{e}$ and associate λ with \mathbf{a} . We thus take $\alpha_{2k-1} = (\lambda + k - 1) \mathbf{a}_{k-1} = (\lambda + k - 1) \mathbf{e}_{k-1}$ and $\alpha_{2k} = \mathbf{b}_{k-1}^*$; we must then choose $\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}$ so that

$$\mathbf{c}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{d}_{n-1}^\natural = \mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* + n \mathbf{e}_n . \quad (2.106)$$

This too can be done in various ways; the simplest seems to be to choose $\mathbf{b} = \mathbf{c}$ and $d_{n-1, \ell} = e_n = a_n \forall \ell$. This yields:

Theorem 2.15 (Second master S-fraction for permutations). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials $\widehat{Q}_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}, \lambda)$ specialized to $\mathbf{a} = \mathbf{e}$, $\mathbf{b} = \mathbf{c}$ and*

$d_{n-1,\ell} = e_n = a_n \forall \ell$ has the S -type continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \widehat{Q}_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{a}, \lambda) \Big|_{d_{n-1,\ell}=a_n \forall \ell} t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\lambda \mathbf{a}_0 t}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{b}_0^* t}{1 - \frac{(\lambda + 1) \mathbf{a}_1 t}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{b}_1^* t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (2.107)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = (\lambda + k - 1) \mathbf{a}_{k-1} \quad (2.108a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = \mathbf{b}_{k-1}^* \quad (2.108b)$$

If in Theorem 2.15 we then make the specializations (2.104) and (2.96), we obtain Theorem 2.13.

2.13 Counting connected components; indecomposable permutations

Let us now show how to extend our permutation polynomials to count also the connected components of a permutation. As a corollary, we will obtain continued fractions for indecomposable permutations.

A *divider* of a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ is an index $i \in [n]$ such that σ maps the interval $[1, i]$ into (hence onto) itself; equivalently, σ maps the complementary interval $[i+1, n]$ into (hence onto) itself. Clearly, when $n = 0$ (hence $\sigma = \emptyset$) there are no dividers; when $n \geq 1$, the index n is always a divider, and there may or may not be others. A *connected component* of $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ [26, p. 262] [78, A059438] is a minimal nonempty interval $[i, j] \subseteq [n]$ such that the intervals $[1, i-1]$, $[i, j]$ and $[j+1, n]$ are all mapped by σ into (hence onto) themselves. If $1 \leq i_1 < i_2 < \dots < i_k = n$ are the dividers of σ , then $[1, i_1]$, $[i_1 + 1, i_2]$, \dots , $[i_{k-1} + 1, i_k]$ are its connected components. So the number of connected components equals the number of dividers; we write it as $\text{cc}(\sigma)$. Thus $\text{cc}(\emptyset) = 0$; for $n \geq 1$ we have $1 \leq \text{cc}(\sigma) \leq n$, with $\text{cc}(\sigma) = n$ if and only if σ is the identity permutation. A permutation σ is called *indecomposable* (or *irreducible* or *connected*) if $\text{cc}(\sigma) = 1$ [78, A003319] (see also [25, 27, 28, 39, 51]).¹⁶

In any of the permutation polynomials studied thus far, we can insert an additional factor $\zeta^{\text{cc}(\sigma)}$. This affects the continued fractions as follows:

Theorem 2.16 (Counting connected components in permutations). *Consider any of the polynomials (2.4), (2.5), (2.23), (2.29), (2.45), (2.51), (2.58), (2.77), (2.92) or*

¹⁶ **Warnings:** 1) Bóna [13, p. 162] defines a permutation to be “indecomposable” if there does not exist an index $k \in [n-1]$ such that $\sigma(i) > \sigma(j)$ (greater!!) whenever $i \leq k < j$. This differs from our definition, but is related to it by the involution $\sigma \mapsto R \circ \sigma$ where $R(i) = n+1-i$.

2) The term “irreducible” has also been employed [5, 6] to denote a *different* class of permutations, namely, those in which there is no index i satisfying $\sigma(i+1) - \sigma(i) = 1$.

(2.100), and insert an additional factor $\zeta^{\text{cc}(\sigma)}$. Then the continued fractions associated to the ordinary generating functions are modified as follows: in each S-fraction, multiply α_1 by ζ ; in each J-fraction, multiply γ_0 and β_1 by ζ .

This result has an easy proof in our labeled-Motzkin-paths formalism, as we shall remark in Sections 6.1 and 6.2. But it also has a simple “renewal theory” explanation, as follows: Given permutations $\sigma = (\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m) \in \mathfrak{S}_m$ and $\tau = (\tau_1, \dots, \tau_n) \in \mathfrak{S}_n$, let us define their *concatenation* $\sigma|\tau \in \mathfrak{S}_{m+n}$ as $(\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m, \tau_1+m, \dots, \tau_n+m)$. Multiple concatenations are defined in the obvious way. Then every permutation can be written uniquely as a concatenation of (zero or more) indecomposable permutations (namely, σ restricted to its connected components, with indices relabeled to start at 1). Now let P_n be any permutation polynomial based on statistics that are additive under concatenation, and include also a factor $\zeta^{\text{cc}(\sigma)}$; and let P_n^{ind} be the corresponding polynomial with the sum restricted to indecomposable permutations (without the factor ζ). Now define the ordinary generating functions

$$f(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n t^n \quad (2.109a)$$

$$g(t) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} P_n^{\text{ind}} t^n \quad (2.109b)$$

Then it is immediate from the foregoing that

$$f(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \zeta g(t)}. \quad (2.110)$$

Moreover, all of the statistics that have been considered here are indeed additive under concatenation: it is easy to see that this holds for statistics based on the cycle structure, on the record structure, or on crossings and nestings. Theorem 2.16 is an immediate consequence.

Remark. Let us observe that, by contrast, some of the statistics based on the *linear* structure of the permutation (see Section 2.17) are *not* additive under concatenation. For instance, the ascents in $\sigma|\tau$ include those in σ and τ *plus one more* at the boundary between σ and τ ; so the ascent statistic is not additive. (It does, however, behave in a simple way under concatenation.) On the other hand, the descents in $\sigma|\tau$ include only those in σ and τ , so the descent statistic *is* additive. ■

These considerations also allow us to deduce continued fractions for the ordinary generating functions of the polynomials P_n^{ind} associated to indecomposable permutations. Indeed, it follows immediately from (2.110) that if $f(t)$ is the ordinary generating function associated to all permutations (without factors $\zeta^{\text{cc}(\sigma)}$), then $g(t) = 1 - 1/f(t)$ is the ordinary generating function associated to indecomposable permutations. Thus, if the polynomials P_n (without factors $\zeta^{\text{cc}(\sigma)}$) are given by an S-fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\alpha_1 t}{1 - \frac{\alpha_2 t}{1 - \dots}}}, \quad (2.111)$$

then the polynomials P_n^{ind} are given by an S-fraction

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} P_n^{\text{ind}} t^n = \frac{\alpha_1 t}{1 - \frac{\alpha_2 t}{1 - \frac{\alpha_3 t}{1 - \dots}}} . \quad (2.112)$$

And if the P_n are given by a J-fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \gamma_0 t - \frac{\beta_1 t^2}{1 - \gamma_1 t - \frac{\beta_2 t^2}{1 - \dots}}} , \quad (2.113)$$

then the P_n^{ind} are given by a J-fraction plus an additive linear term:

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} P_n^{\text{ind}} t^n = \gamma_0 t + \frac{\beta_1 t^2}{1 - \gamma_1 t - \frac{\beta_2 t^2}{1 - \gamma_2 t - \frac{\beta_3 t^2}{1 - \dots}}} . \quad (2.114)$$

2.14 321-avoiding permutations

A permutation σ is called *321-avoiding* if there do not exist indices $i < j < k$ such that $\sigma(i) > \sigma(j) > \sigma(k)$. In other words, σ is 321-avoiding if there does not exist an index j that is neither a record nor an antirecord. In detail, this means that every cycle valley or cycle double rise is an exclusive record, every cycle peak or cycle double fall is an exclusive antirecord, and every fixed point is a record-antirecord.¹⁷ It is well known [13, Section 4.2] [97, item 115] that the number of 321-avoiding permutations of $[n]$ is the Catalan number C_n . By specializing our preceding results to suppress neither-record-antirecords, we can deduce continued fractions for the ordinary generating functions of polynomials enumerating 321-avoiding permutations with a variety of record and crossing/nesting statistics.

The simplest such result is obtained by setting $u = v = 0$ in Theorem 2.1; as mentioned already in (2.18), this leads to the homogenized Narayana polynomials and their ordinary generating function

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(x, y, 0, 0) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{yt}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{yt}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (2.115)$$

¹⁷ The converses are of course true in every permutation, as was observed in Section 2.1.

with coefficients $\alpha_{2k-1} = x$, $\alpha_{2k} = y$. Specializing further to $x = y = 1$ we obtain the well-known S-fraction for the ordinary generating function of the Catalan numbers:

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} C_n t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{t}{1 - \frac{t}{1 - \frac{t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (2.116)$$

with coefficients $\alpha_n = 1$.

More generally, we can set $u_1 = u_2 = v_1 = v_2 = w = 0$ in (2.19); or even more generally, we can set $u_1 = u_2 = v_1 = v_2 = 0$ and $w_\ell = 0$ for $\ell \geq 1$ in (2.23) or (2.51). Taking the latter leads to the J-fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} Q_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, 0, 0, 0, 0, w_0, \mathbf{0}, p_{+1}, p_{+2}, p_{-1}, p_{-2}, q_{+1}, q_{+2}, q_{-1}, q_{-2}, s) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - w_0 t - \frac{x_1 y_1 t^2}{1 - (x_2 + y_2)t - \frac{p_{-1} p_{+1} x_1 y_1 t^2}{1 - (p_{-2} x_2 + p_{+2} y_2)t - \frac{p_{-1}^2 p_{+1}^2 x_1 y_1 t^2}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.117)$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_0 = w_0 \quad (2.118a)$$

$$\gamma_n = p_{-2}^{n-1} x_2 + p_{+2}^{n-1} y_2 \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (2.118b)$$

$$\beta_n = p_{-1}^{n-1} p_{+1}^{n-1} x_1 y_1 \quad (2.118c)$$

Note that $q_{\pm 1}, q_{\pm 2}, s$ do not enter here; this is because:

Lemma 2.17. *A 321-avoiding permutation cannot have an upper nesting, lower nesting, upper pseudo-nesting or lower pseudo-nesting.*

PROOF. Suppose that $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ has an upper nesting or pseudo-nesting, i.e. there exist $i, j \in [n]$ such that $i < j \leq \sigma(j) < \sigma(i)$. Now partition $[n] = [1, j] \cup [j+1, n]$. There is at least one arc of σ running from $[1, j]$ to $[j+1, n]$ — namely, the arc from i to $\sigma(i)$ — so there must be at least one arc running in the opposite direction, i.e. there exists $k > j$ such that $\sigma(k) \leq j$. And in case $\sigma(j) = j$, then we must have $\sigma(k) < j$. So $\sigma(k) < \sigma(j)$, contradicting the hypothesis that σ is 321-avoiding. An analogous proof works if σ has a lower nesting or pseudo-nesting. \square

We can also get an S-fraction by setting $u = v = 0$ in (2.58); this leads to

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(x, y, 0, 0, p_+, p_-, q_+, q_-) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{yt}{1 - \frac{p_- xt}{1 - \frac{p_+ yt}{1 - \frac{p_-^2 xt}{1 - \frac{p_+^2 yt}{1 - \dots}}}}}}}} \quad (2.119)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = p_-^{k-1} x \quad (2.120a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = p_+^{k-1} y \quad (2.120b)$$

2.15 Cycle-alternating permutations

A permutation σ is called *cycle-alternating* if it has no cycle double rises, cycle double falls, or fixed points; thus, each cycle of σ is of even length (call it $2k$) and consists of k cycle valleys and k cycle peaks in alternation. Deutsch and Elizalde [32, Proposition 2.2] have shown that the number of cycle-alternating permutations of $[2n]$ is the secant number E_{2n} (see also Biane [10]). By specializing our preceding results to suppress cycle double rises, cycle double falls and fixed points, we can deduce continued fractions for the ordinary generating functions of polynomials enumerating cycle-alternating permutations with a variety of record and crossing/nesting statistics.

The simplest such result is obtained by setting $x_2 = y_2 = u_2 = v_2 = w_\ell = 0$ in Theorem 2.2. Then all the coefficients γ_n in the J-fraction vanish, so that we obtain an S-fraction in the variable t^2 that enumerates cycle-alternating permutations according to their record statistics. Changing t^2 to t , we have:

Theorem 2.18 (S-fraction for cycle-alternating permutations). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials*

$$Q_{2n}(x_1, 0, y_1, 0, u_1, 0, v_1, 0, \mathbf{0}) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathcal{S}_{2n}^{\text{ca}}} x_1^{\text{ereccpeak}(\sigma)} y_1^{\text{ereccval}(\sigma)} u_1^{\text{nrcpeak}(\sigma)} v_1^{\text{nrcval}(\sigma)} \quad (2.121)$$

enumerating cycle-alternating permutations according to their record statistics has the S-type continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} Q_{2n}(x_1, 0, y_1, 0, u_1, 0, v_1, 0, \mathbf{0}) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{x_1 y_1 t}{1 - \frac{(x_1 + u_1)(y_1 + v_1)t}{1 - \frac{(x_1 + 2u_1)(y_1 + 2v_1)t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.122)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_n = [x_1 + (n-1)u_1] [y_1 + (n-1)v_1]. \quad (2.123)$$

In particular, specializing to $x_1 = y_1 = u_1 = v_1 = 1$, we obtain the well-known [87, 98] [48, Theorem 3B(iii)] S-fraction expansion of the ordinary generating function of the secant numbers:

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} E_{2n} t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{1^2 t}{1 - \frac{2^2 t}{1 - \frac{3^2 t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.124)$$

with coefficients $\alpha_n = n^2$.

More generally, we can make the corresponding specialization in Theorem 2.7 and thereby include crossing and nesting statistics:

Theorem 2.19 (S-fraction for cycle-alternating permutations, p, q -generalization). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials*

$$Q_{2n}(x_1, 0, y_1, 0, u_1, 0, v_1, 0, \mathbf{0}, p_{+1}, 0, p_{-1}, 0, q_{+1}, 0, q_{-1}, 0, 0) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_{2n}^{\text{ca}}} x_1^{\text{eareccpeak}(\sigma)} y_1^{\text{ereccval}(\sigma)} u_1^{\text{nrcpeak}(\sigma)} v_1^{\text{nrcval}(\sigma)} \times \frac{p_{+1}^{\text{ucrosscval}(\sigma)} p_{-1}^{\text{lcrosspeak}(\sigma)} q_{+1}^{\text{unestcval}(\sigma)} q_{-1}^{\text{lnestpeak}(\sigma)}}{1 - \dots} \quad (2.125)$$

enumerating cycle-alternating permutations according to their record and crossing/nesting statistics has the S-type continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} Q_{2n}(x_1, 0, y_1, 0, u_1, 0, v_1, 0, \mathbf{0}, p_{+1}, 0, p_{-1}, 0, q_{+1}, 0, q_{-1}, 0, 0) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{x_1 y_1 t}{1 - \frac{(p_{-1} x_1 + q_{-1} u_1)(p_{+1} y_1 + q_{+1} v_1) t}{1 - \frac{(p_{-1}^2 x_1 + q_{-1} [2]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} u_1)(p_{+1}^2 y_1 + q_{+1} [2]_{p_{+1}, q_{+1}} v_1) t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.126)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_n = (p_{-1}^{n-1} x_1 + q_{-1} [n-1]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} u_1) (p_{+1}^{n-1} y_1 + q_{+1} [n-1]_{p_{+1}, q_{+1}} v_1). \quad (2.127)$$

Most generally, we can set $\mathbf{c} = \mathbf{d} = \mathbf{e} = \mathbf{0}$ in the first master J-fraction for permutations (Theorem 2.9) to obtain:

Theorem 2.20 (First master S-fraction for cycle-alternating permutations). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials*

$$Q_{2n}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_{2n}^{\text{ca}}} \prod_{i \in \text{cval}} \mathbf{a}_{\text{ucross}(i, \sigma), \text{unest}(i, \sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{cpeak}} \mathbf{b}_{\text{lcross}(i, \sigma), \text{lnest}(i, \sigma)} \quad (2.128)$$

enumerating cycle-alternating permutations has the S-type continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} Q_{2n}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{a_{00}b_{00}t}{1 - \frac{(a_{01} + a_{10})(b_{01} + b_{10})t}{1 - \frac{(a_{02} + a_{11} + a_{20})(b_{02} + b_{11} + b_{20})t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.129)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_n = \mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* \quad (2.130)$$

where $\mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} \mathbf{a}_{\ell, n-1-\ell}$ and likewise for \mathbf{b} .

We can also obtain a second S-fraction for cycle-alternating permutations by setting $x_2 = y_2 = u_2 = v_2 = w_\ell = 0$ in Theorem 2.4: this allows us to include the counting of cycles (λ), but at the expense of ignoring the record status of cycle valleys ($v_1 = y_1$). We have:

Theorem 2.21 (Second S-fraction for cycle-alternating permutations). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials*

$$\widehat{Q}_{2n}(x_1, 0, y_1, 0, u_1, 0, y_1, 0, \mathbf{0}, \lambda) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_{2n}^{\text{ca}}} x_1^{\text{eareccpeak}(\sigma)} u_1^{\text{nrcpeak}(\sigma)} y_1^{\text{cval}(\sigma)} \lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} \quad (2.131)$$

has the S-type continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \widehat{Q}_{2n}(x_1, 0, y_1, 0, u_1, 0, y_1, 0, \mathbf{0}, \lambda) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\lambda x_1 y_1 t}{1 - \frac{(\lambda + 1)(x_1 + u_1) y_1 t}{1 - \frac{(\lambda + 2)(x_1 + 2u_1) y_1 t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.132)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_n = (\lambda + n - 1) [x_1 + (n - 1)u_1] y_1. \quad (2.133)$$

Note that here the variable y_1 is redundant, as it can be absorbed into x_1 and u_1 . This reflects the fact that for cycle-alternating permutations one has $\text{cval} = \text{cpeak} = \text{eareccpeak} + \text{nrcpeak}$.

More generally, we can make the corresponding specialization in Theorem 2.12 and thereby include crossing and nesting statistics (again subject to the specialization $v_1 = y_1$):

Theorem 2.22 (Second S-fraction for cycle-alternating permutations, p, q -generalization). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials*

$$\begin{aligned} \widehat{Q}_{2n}(x_1, 0, y_1, 0, u_1, 0, y_1, 0, \mathbf{0}, p_{+1}, 0, p_{-1}, 0, q_{+1}, 0, q_{-1}, 0, 0, \lambda) = \\ \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_{2n}^{\text{ca}}} x_1^{\text{eareccpeak}(\sigma)} u_1^{\text{nrcpeak}(\sigma)} y_1^{\text{cval}(\sigma)} \times \\ p_{+1}^{\text{ucrosscval}(\sigma)} p_{-1}^{\text{lcrosscpeak}(\sigma)} q_{+1}^{\text{unestcval}(\sigma)} q_{-1}^{\text{lnestcpeak}(\sigma)} \lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} \end{aligned} \quad (2.134)$$

has the S -type continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \widehat{Q}_{2n}(x_1, 0, y_1, 0, u_1, 0, y_1, 0, \mathbf{0}, p_{+1}, 0, p_{-1}, 0, q_{+1}, 0, q_{-1}, 0, 0, \lambda) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\lambda x_1 y_1 t}{1 - \frac{(\lambda + 1)(p_{-1} x_1 + q_{-1} u_1) p_{+1} y_1 t}{1 - \frac{(\lambda + 2)(p_{-1}^2 x_1 + q_{-1} [2]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} u_1) p_{+1}^2 y_1 t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.135)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_n = (\lambda + n - 1) (p_{-1}^{n-1} x_1 + q_{-1} [n - 1]_{p_{-1}, q_{-1}} u_1) p_{+1}^{n-1} y_1. \quad (2.136)$$

Most generally, we can set $\mathbf{c} = \mathbf{d} = \mathbf{e} = \mathbf{0}$ in the second master J-fraction for permutations (Theorem 2.14) to obtain:

Theorem 2.23 (Second master S-fraction for cycle-alternating permutations). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials*

$$\widehat{Q}_{2n}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \lambda) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_{2n}^{\text{sa}}} \lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{cval}} \mathbf{a}_{\text{ucross}(i, \sigma) + \text{unest}(i, \sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{cpeak}} \mathbf{b}_{\text{lcross}(i, \sigma), \text{lnest}(i, \sigma)} \quad (2.137)$$

has the S -type continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \widehat{Q}_{2n}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \lambda) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\lambda \mathbf{a}_0 \mathbf{b}_{00} t}{1 - \frac{(\lambda + 1) \mathbf{a}_1 (\mathbf{b}_{01} + \mathbf{b}_{10}) t}{1 - \frac{(\lambda + 2) \mathbf{a}_2 (\mathbf{b}_{02} + \mathbf{b}_{11} + \mathbf{b}_{20}) t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.138)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_n = (\lambda + n - 1) \mathbf{a}_{n-1} \mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* \quad (2.139)$$

where $\mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} \mathbf{b}_{\ell, n-1-\ell}$.

A final remark. In Section 4 we will enumerate perfect matchings — which are a subclass of cycle-alternating permutations — with distinct weights for even and odd cycle peaks. On the other hand, Dumont [35, 36] has shown that if one enumerates *all* permutations with distinct weights for even and odd cycle peaks, one obtains the Schett polynomials, which are closely related to the Jacobian elliptic functions. It would be interesting to know whether any of our S-fractions for cycle-alternating permutations can likewise be refined by giving distinct weights for even and odd cycle peaks. ■

2.16 A remark on the inversion statistic

An *inversion* of a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ is a pair $(i, j) \in [n] \times [n]$ such that $i < j$ and $\sigma(i) > \sigma(j)$. We write

$$\text{inv}(\sigma) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \#\{(i, j): i \leq j \text{ and } \sigma(i) > \sigma(j)\} \quad (2.140)$$

for the number of inversions in σ . Note that $\text{inv}(\sigma) = \text{inv}(\sigma^{-1})$.

De Médicis and Viennot [31, Lemme 3.1] gave an expression for $\text{inv}(\sigma)$ that can be translated into our language as follows (see also [91, eq. (40)]):

Proposition 2.24. *We have*

$$\text{inv} = \text{exc} + (\text{ucross} + 2 \text{unest}) + (\text{lcross} + \text{ljoin} + 2 \text{lnest} + 2 \text{lpsnest}) \quad (2.141a)$$

$$= \text{cval} + \text{cdrise} + \text{cdfall} + \text{ucross} + \text{lcross} + 2(\text{unest} + \text{lnest} + \text{psnest}) \quad (2.141b)$$

Note that (2.141b) is invariant under $\sigma \leftrightarrow \sigma^{-1}$, since $\text{cval}(\sigma) = \text{cval}(\sigma^{-1})$, $\text{cdrise}(\sigma) = \text{cdfall}(\sigma^{-1})$, $\text{ucross}(\sigma) = \text{lcross}(\sigma^{-1})$, $\text{unest}(\sigma) = \text{lnest}(\sigma^{-1})$ and $\text{psnest}(\sigma) = \text{psnest}(\sigma^{-1})$.

Since the proof of Proposition 2.24 given in [31] is rather lengthy, for completeness let us give a short proof. This proof is based on the following pair of identities [24, Lemma 8]:

Lemma 2.25. *For any permutation σ , we have*

$$\#\{(i, j): i \leq j < \sigma(i) \text{ and } \sigma(j) > j\} = \#\{(i, j): \sigma(i) < \sigma(j) \leq i \text{ and } \sigma(j) > j\} \quad (2.142)$$

$$\#\{(i, j): i \leq j < \sigma(i) \text{ and } \sigma(j) \leq j\} = \#\{(i, j): \sigma(i) < \sigma(j) \leq i \text{ and } \sigma(j) \leq j\} \quad (2.143)$$

PROOF OF LEMMA 2.25. The equality (2.142) was proven by Clarke [23, Lemma 3].

To prove (2.143), note that $\sum_{i=1}^n [\sigma(i) - i] = 0$ and hence $\sum_{i: \sigma(i) > i} [\sigma(i) - i] = \sum_{i: \sigma(i) < i} [i - \sigma(i)]$, or in other words

$$\#\{(i, j): i \leq j < \sigma(i)\} = \#\{(i, j): \sigma(i) < \sigma(j) \leq i\}. \quad (2.144)$$

Subtracting (2.142) from (2.144) yields (2.143). \square

PROOF OF PROPOSITION 2.24. Let us begin by observing that (2.142) and (2.143) can be rewritten, by consideration of cases, as

$$\#\{(i, j): i \leq j < \sigma(i) \text{ and } \sigma(j) > j\} = \text{exc} + \text{ucross} + \text{unest} \quad (2.145)$$

$$\#\{(i, j): \sigma(i) < \sigma(j) \leq i \text{ and } \sigma(j) \leq j\} = \text{ljoin} + \text{lcross} + \text{lnest} + \text{lpsnest} \quad (2.146)$$

Let us now divide the set of inversion pairs $\{(i, j): i < j \text{ and } \sigma(i) > \sigma(j)\}$ into three classes:

- 1) $\sigma(i) \leq i$ [hence $\sigma(j) < \sigma(i) \leq i < j$];
- 2) $\sigma(i) > i$ and $\sigma(j) \geq j$ [hence $i < j \leq \sigma(j) < \sigma(i)$];
- 3) $\sigma(i) > i$ and $\sigma(j) < j$.

The first class yields $\text{lnest} + \text{lpsnest}$. The second class yields $\text{unest} + \text{upsnest}$. Let us divide the third class into two subclasses:

- 3a) $\sigma(i) > i$ and $\sigma(j) < j$ and $\sigma(i) \leq j$ [hence $\sigma(j) < \sigma(i) \leq j$ and $\sigma(i) > i$];
- 3b) $\sigma(i) > i$ and $\sigma(j) < j$ and $\sigma(i) > j$ [hence $i < j < \sigma(i)$ and $\sigma(j) < j$].

Class (3a) is the right-hand side of (2.142) [with $i \leftrightarrow j$], which by (2.142)/(2.145) equals $\text{exc} + \text{ucross} + \text{unest}$. On the other hand, the left-hand side of (2.143) can be rewritten as $\#\{(i, j) : i < j < \sigma(i) \text{ and } \sigma(j) \leq j\}$ (since $i = j$ contradicts the other inequalities), which in turn equals class (3b) plus upsnest ; therefore, by (2.143)/(2.146), class (3b) yields $\text{ljoin} + \text{lcross} + \text{lnest}$ (since $\text{upsnest} = \text{lpsnest}$). Combining classes (1), (2), (3a) and (3b) and using $\text{upsnest} = \text{lpsnest}$ gives (2.141a). \square

See also the end of Section 6.2 for an alternate proof of Proposition 2.24 based on the Biane bijection to labeled Motzkin paths.

Using Proposition 2.24, results involving inv can be translated to the cycle, crossing and nesting statistics, which in our opinion are more fundamental. For instance, we see from (2.141b) that Zeng's [108] S-fraction for the weights $a^{\text{arec}(\sigma)}b^{\text{erec}(\sigma)}q^{\text{inv}(\sigma)}$ is the special case of Theorem 2.8 with

$$x = a, \quad y = qb, \quad u = 1, \quad v = q, \quad p_+ = p_- = q, \quad q_+ = q_- = q^2, \quad (2.147)$$

as already remarked in Section 2.6. See also [110, eqns. (2.3) and (3.2)] for the special case $b = 1$. Similarly, Elizalde's [42, eqn. (4)] J-fraction for the weights $a^{\text{cval}(\sigma)}b^{\text{cdrise}(\sigma)}w^{\text{fix}(\sigma)}q^{\text{inv}(\sigma)}$ is the special case of Theorem 2.7 with

$$\begin{aligned} x_1 = u_1 = 1, \quad x_2 = u_2 = q, \quad y_1 = v_1 = qa, \quad y_2 = v_2 = qb, \quad w_\ell = w \quad \forall \ell, \\ p_{+1} = p_{+2} = p_{-1} = p_{-2} = q, \quad q_{+1} = q_{+2} = q_{-1} = q_{-2} = q^2, \quad s = q^2. \end{aligned} \quad (2.148)$$

Indeed, we can obtain a more general J-fraction with weights $a^{\text{cval}(\sigma)}b^{\text{cdrise}(\sigma)}c^{\text{cpeak}(\sigma)}d^{\text{cdfall}(\sigma)}w^{\text{fix}(\sigma)}q^{\text{inv}(\sigma)}$ by specializing Theorem 2.7 to

$$\begin{aligned} x_1 = u_1 = c, \quad x_2 = u_2 = qd, \quad y_1 = v_1 = qa, \quad y_2 = v_2 = qb, \quad w_\ell = w \quad \forall \ell, \\ p_{+1} = p_{+2} = p_{-1} = p_{-2} = q, \quad q_{+1} = q_{+2} = q_{-1} = q_{-2} = q^2, \quad s = q^2, \end{aligned} \quad (2.149)$$

yielding continued-fraction coefficients

$$\gamma_n = q^n [n]_q (b + d) + \lambda q^{2n} w \quad (2.150a)$$

$$\beta_n = q^{2n-1} [n]_q^2 ac \quad (2.150b)$$

as a specialization of (2.54).

Remark. Note that we are *unable* to include an additional weight $\lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)}$ in this latter J-fraction, because Theorem 2.12 requires $q_{+1} = p_{+1}$ and $q_{+2} = p_{+2}$, which are not the case in (2.149). This inability to include the weight $\lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)}$ is not merely a limitation of our method of proof, but is inherent in the problem. Indeed, even the simpler weight $q^{\text{inv}(\sigma)}\lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)}$ gives rise to a J-fraction with coefficients that are rational functions rather than polynomials: the first coefficients are

$$\gamma_0 = \lambda, \beta_1 = \lambda q, \gamma_1 = q(2 + \lambda q), \beta_2 = q^2(\lambda + 2q + \lambda q^2), \quad (2.151)$$

followed by

$$\gamma_2 = \frac{q^2(2 + 6\lambda q + 6q^2 + \lambda^2 q^2 + 4\lambda q^3 + \lambda^2 q^4)}{\lambda + 2q + \lambda q^2}. \quad (2.152)$$

It can then be shown that

- (a) γ_2 is a polynomial in λ if and only if $q \in \{-1, 0, +1, -i, i\}$; and
- (b) γ_2 is a polynomial in q if and only if $\lambda \in \{-1, 0, +1\}$.

Note also that the cases $q = \pm 1$ and $\lambda = \pm 1$ are reducible to the trivial cases $q = 1$ or $\lambda = 1$ by exploiting the elementary identity $\text{inv}(\sigma) + \text{cyc}(\sigma) = n \pmod{2}$. ■

Similarly, Elizalde's [42, section 4.2] J-fraction for 321-avoiding permutations with the weights $a^{\text{cval}(\sigma)}b^{\text{cdrise}(\sigma)}w_0^{\text{rar}(\sigma)}q^{\text{inv}(\sigma)}$ is the special case of (2.117)/(2.118) with

$$x_1 = 1, \quad x_2 = q, \quad y_1 = qa, \quad y_2 = qb, \quad p_{+1} = p_{+2} = p_{-1} = p_{-2} = q. \quad (2.153)$$

Finally, Biane [10, section 6] has given a q -analogue of (2.124), by defining the q -secant numbers in terms of cycle-alternating permutations:

$$E_{2n}(q) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_{2n}^{\text{ca}}} q^{\text{inv}(\sigma)}. \quad (2.154)$$

Since a cycle-alternating permutation cannot have any cycle double rises, cycle double falls or fixed points, the identity (2.141) specializes in this case to

$$\text{inv} = \text{cval} + \text{ucross} + \text{lcross} + 2(\text{unest} + \text{lrest}). \quad (2.155)$$

Applying Theorem 2.19 with

$$x_1 = u_1 = 1, \quad y_1 = v_1 = q, \quad p_{+1} = p_{-1} = q, \quad q_{+1} = q_{-1} = q^2, \quad (2.156)$$

we obtain an S-fraction with coefficients

$$\alpha_n = q^{2n-1} [n]_q^2, \quad (2.157)$$

exactly as given by Biane [10].

2.17 A remark on linear statistics

In this paper we have studied the classification of indices $i \in [n]$ in a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ according to *cyclic* statistics, i.e. cycle peak, cycle valley, cycle double rise, cycle double fall, and fixed point. An alternative classification involves *linear* statistics, i.e. classifying indices $i \in [n]$ as

- *peak*: $\sigma(i-1) < \sigma(i) > \sigma(i+1)$;
- *valley*: $\sigma(i-1) > \sigma(i) < \sigma(i+1)$;
- *double rise*: $\sigma(i-1) < \sigma(i) < \sigma(i+1)$;
- *double fall*: $\sigma(i-1) > \sigma(i) > \sigma(i+1)$.

However, in order to define the linear statistics it is necessary to adopt boundary conditions at the two ends ($i = 0$ and $i = n + 1$): namely, at each end we can set σ to be either 0 (or equivalently $-\infty$), $n + 1$ (or equivalently $+\infty$), or “undefined” — where an inequality involving “undefined” is considered to be automatically false. (Thus, for instance, if $\sigma(0) = \text{undefined}$, then we count peaks, valleys, double rises and double falls only starting at $i = 2$.) So there are *nine* possible combinations of boundary conditions, of which four are essentially distinct:

- $\sigma(0) = \sigma(n+1) = 0$ [or the “dual” $\sigma(0) = \sigma(n+1) = n+1$];
- $\sigma(0) = 0$ and $\sigma(n+1) = n+1$ [or the “dual” $\sigma(0) = n+1$ and $\sigma(n+1) = 0$];
- $\sigma(0) = 0$ and $\sigma(n+1) = \text{undefined}$ [or any of the three “duals”];
- $\sigma(0) = \sigma(n+1) = \text{undefined}$.

The first two of these boundary conditions have been extensively studied (e.g. [54, 109]), and some limited sets of statistics (e.g. only peaks) have been studied under all of these boundary conditions (e.g. [70, 80, 111]).

It would be an interesting project to study the joint distribution of the four linear statistics — possibly along with other statistics — under each of the four possible boundary conditions, and to obtain continued fractions for the associated ordinary generating functions. We can imagine at least two ways in which this could be done: by transforming our results for cyclic statistics using Foata’s fundamental transformation [52, section 1.3] [96, pp. 17–18] [13, section 3.3.1] or some other bijection (e.g. [24, section 5]); or alternatively by imitating our proofs in Section 6 but using the Françon–Viennot [54] bijection in place of the Foata–Zeilberger [53] and Biane [10] bijections.¹⁸ We must leave this study for future work; but we should note that an impressive start was already made two decades ago by Randrianarivony [83, Théorème 2].

Let us observe, finally, that there is an alternate way of getting p, q -generalizations by using generalized pattern avoidance instead of crossings and nestings [12, 22, 24, 29, 91, 92]. These pattern-avoidance statistics mesh naturally with linear statistics.

¹⁸ See [24, section 5] for a discussion of the relationship between these three bijections.

3 Set partitions: Statement of results

3.1 S-fraction

The *Bell number* B_n is, by definition, the number of partitions of an n -element set into nonempty blocks; by convention we set $B_0 = 1$. The ordinary generating function of the Bell numbers can be represented as an S-type continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} B_n t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{1t}{1 - \frac{1t}{1 - \frac{1t}{1 - \frac{2t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (3.1)$$

with coefficients $\alpha_{2k-1} = 1$, $\alpha_{2k} = k$.¹⁹ Inspired by (3.1), let us introduce the polynomials $B_n(x, y, v)$ defined by the continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} B_n(x, y, v) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{yt}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{(y+v)t}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{(y+2v)t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (3.2)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = x \quad (3.3a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = y + (k-1)v \quad (3.3b)$$

Clearly $B_n(x, y, v)$ is a homogeneous polynomial of degree n ; it therefore has two “truly independent” variables. Since $B_n(1, 1, 1) = B_n$, it is plausible to expect that $B_n(x, y, v)$ enumerates partitions of the set $[n]$ according to some natural bivariate

¹⁹ We are not sure where the S-fraction (3.1) first appeared. The J-fraction that is equivalent to (3.1) by contraction (1.3) was found by Touchard [103, section 4] in 1956 (up to a change of variables $x = 1/t$). Flajolet [48, Theorem 2(ia)] gave a combinatorial proof of this J-fraction; and he observed [48, pp. 141–142] that this J-fraction is implicit in the three-term recurrence relation for the Poisson–Charlier polynomials [20, p. 25, Exercise 4.10]. The S-fraction (3.1) — as well as some q -generalizations — can be derived directly from the functional equation satisfied by the ordinary generating function $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} B_n t^n$: see [38] [110, proof of Lemma 3] for this elegant method. The S-fraction (3.1) is also a straightforward consequence of Aigner’s [1] evaluation of the zero-shifted and once-shifted Hankel determinants of the Bell numbers. However, there may well be earlier references (for either the S-fraction or the J-fraction) of which we are unaware; we would be grateful to readers for drawing our attention to them.

statistic. Of course $B_n(x, y, v)$ is simply $P_n(x, y, u, v)$ [cf. (2.2)] specialized to $u = 0$; but our goal here is to interpret it in terms of set partitions, not permutations. Our result is:

Theorem 3.1 (S-fraction for set partitions). *The polynomials $B_n(x, y, v)$ defined by (3.2)/(3.3) have the combinatorial interpretation*

$$B_n(x, y, v) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} x^{|\pi|} y^{\text{erec}(\pi)} v^{n-|\pi|-\text{erec}(\pi)} \quad (3.4)$$

where $|\pi|$ [resp. $\text{erec}(\pi)$] denotes the number of blocks (resp. exclusive records) in π .

We need to explain what we mean by an “exclusive record” of a set partition π . First of all, given a partition π of $[n]$, we say that an element $i \in [n]$ is

- an *opener* if it is the smallest element of a block of size ≥ 2 ;
- a *closer* if it is the largest element of a block of size ≥ 2 ;
- an *insider* if it is a non-opener non-closer element of a block of size ≥ 3 ;
- a *singleton* if it is the sole element of a block of size 1.

Clearly every element $i \in [n]$ belongs to precisely one of these four classes.

Then we define “exclusive record” as follows: For $i \in [n]$, write $B_\pi(i)$ for the block of π containing i , and then define $\sigma'(i)$ to be the next-larger element of $B_\pi(i)$ after i , if i is not the largest element of $B_\pi(i)$, and 0 otherwise. We then say that an index $i \in [n]$ is an *exclusive record* of π if it is a nonzero record of the word σ' , i.e. if $\sigma'(i) \neq 0$ and $\sigma'(j) < \sigma'(i)$ for all $j < i$. Pictorially, we can say that i is an exclusive record of π if it is not the largest element of its block (that is, it is either an opener or an insider) and its right neighbor (within its block) sticks out farther to the right than any right neighbor (within its block) of a vertex $< i$. In Section 3.7 we will reinterpret the notion of exclusive record in terms of nestings.

Since every exclusive record is either an opener or an insider, while $|\pi|$ equals the number of closers plus the number of singletons, it follows that $n - |\pi| - \text{erec}(\pi)$ counts the openers and insiders that are not exclusive records. In particular, $n - |\pi| - \text{erec}(\pi) \geq 0$, so that the right-hand side of (3.4) is indeed a polynomial.

We will prove Theorem 3.1 in Section 7.1.

Remarks. 1. For the special case $y = v$, i.e. the Bell polynomials

$$B_n(x) = B_n(x, 1, 1) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} x^{|\pi|} = \sum_{k=0}^n \left\{ \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\} x^k \quad (3.5)$$

or their homogenization, Flajolet [48, Theorem 2(ib)] found a J-type continued fraction that is equivalent by contraction (1.3) to the specialization of (3.2). Later, Dumont [38] found the S-fraction directly by a functional-equation method, and one of us used this same method to find [110, Lemma 3] two q -generalizations of the S-fraction (these will be discussed in Section 3.11 below).

2. The triangular array corresponding to the polynomials $B_n(x, 1, x)$ can be found in [78, A085791], but without a combinatorial interpretation. The sub-triangular array corresponding to the polynomials $B_n(1, 1, v)$, which interpolate between the Catalan numbers ($v = 0$) and the Bell numbers ($v = 1$), is apparently not in [78]. ■

3.2 J-fraction

We can refine the polynomial $B_n(x, y, v)$ by distinguishing between singletons and blocks of size ≥ 2 ; in addition, we can distinguish between exclusive records that are openers and those that are insiders; and finally, among indices that are not exclusive records, we can also distinguish those that are openers from those that are insiders. That is, we define

$$B_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} x_1^{m_1(\pi)} x_2^{m_{\geq 2}(\pi)} y_1^{\text{erecin}(\pi)} y_2^{\text{erecop}(\pi)} v_1^{\text{nerecin}(\pi)} v_2^{\text{nerecop}(\pi)}, \quad (3.6)$$

where $m_1(\pi)$ is the number of singletons in π , $m_{\geq 2}(\pi)$ is the number of non-singleton blocks (or equivalently the number of closers), $\text{erecin}(\pi)$ is the number of insiders that are exclusive records, $\text{erecop}(\pi)$ is the number of openers that are exclusive records, $\text{nerecin}(\pi)$ is the number of insiders that are not exclusive records, and $\text{nerecop}(\pi)$ is the number of openers that are not exclusive records. We then have a nice J-fraction:

Theorem 3.2 (J-fraction for set partitions). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials $B_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2)$ has the J-type continued fraction*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} B_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2) t^n = \cfrac{1}{1 - x_1 t - \cfrac{x_2 y_2 t^2}{1 - (x_1 + y_1) t - \cfrac{x_2 (y_2 + v_2) t^2}{1 - (x_1 + y_1 + v_1) t - \cfrac{x_2 (y_2 + 2v_2) t^2}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (3.7)$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_0 = x_1 \quad (3.8a)$$

$$\gamma_n = x_1 + y_1 + (n-1)v_1 \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (3.8b)$$

$$\beta_n = x_2 [y_2 + (n-1)v_2] \quad (3.8c)$$

We will prove this theorem in Section 7.2, as a special case of a more general result. The case $y_1 = y_2 = v_1 = v_2$ was obtained previously by Flajolet [48, Theorem 2].

When specialized to $x_1 = x_2$ and $y_1 = y_2$ and $v_1 = v_2$, (3.6) reduces to (3.4), and the J-fraction (3.7) is the contraction (1.3) of the S-fraction (3.2). So Theorem 3.1 is a corollary of a special case of Theorem 3.2.

Warning: Because we have chosen to define x_1 and x_2 as conjugate to $m_1(\pi)$ and $m_{\geq 2}(\pi)$, respectively, the meaning of the subscripts 1 and 2 in the continued fraction (3.7) is reversed vis-à-vis our usage for permutations (compare Theorem 3.2 with Theorem 2.2).

Remark. By setting $y_1 = v_1 = 0$, we can suppress insiders and thereby restrict the sum to set partitions in which every block is of size either 1 or 2. (These are in obvious bijection with involutions, i.e. permutations in which every cycle is of length either 1 or 2.) The resulting J-fraction (3.7)/(3.8) has $\gamma_n = x_1$ for all n , which means [2, eq. (6.15)] [7, Proposition 4] that the polynomials $B_n(x_1, x_2, 0, y_2, 0, v_2)$ are the x_1 -binomial transform of the polynomials $B_n(0, x_2, 0, y_2, 0, v_2) = x_2^n B_n(0, 1, 0, y_2, 0, v_2)$ that enumerate perfect matchings:

$$B_n(x_1, x_2, 0, y_2, 0, v_2) = \sum_{k=0}^n \binom{n}{k} B_k(0, x_2, 0, y_2, 0, v_2) x_1^{n-k}. \quad (3.9)$$

This relation is also obvious combinatorially. See Section 4 for more information on perfect matchings. ■

3.3 First p, q -generalization: Crossings and nestings

Let $\pi = \{B_1, B_2, \dots, B_{|\pi|}\}$ be a partition of $[n]$. We associate to the partition π a graph \mathcal{G}_π with vertex set $[n]$ such that i, j are joined by an edge if and only if they are *consecutive* elements within the same block.²⁰ (The graph \mathcal{G}_π thus has $|\pi|$ connected components and $n - |\pi|$ edges.) We always write an edge e of \mathcal{G}_π as a pair (i, j) with $i < j$. We then say that a quadruplet $i < j < k < l$ forms a

- *crossing* (cr) if $(i, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and $(j, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ [note that i, k and j, l must then belong to different blocks];
- *nesting* (ne) if $(i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and $(j, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ [note that i, l and j, k must then belong to different blocks].

We also consider the “degenerate” case with $j = k$, by saying that a triplet $i < j < l$ forms a

- *pseudo-nesting* (psne) if j is a singleton and $(i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$.

See Figure 4. We define $\text{cr}(\pi)$ [resp. $\text{ne}(\pi)$, $\text{psne}(\pi)$] to be number of crossings (resp. nestings, pseudo-nestings) in π .

We now introduce a p, q -generalization of the polynomial (3.6):

$$\begin{aligned} & B_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p, q, r) \\ &= \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} x_1^{m_1(\pi)} x_2^{m_{\geq 2}(\pi)} y_1^{\text{erecin}(\pi)} y_2^{\text{erecop}(\pi)} v_1^{\text{nerecin}(\pi)} v_2^{\text{nerecop}(\pi)} p^{\text{cr}(\pi)} q^{\text{ne}(\pi)} r^{\text{psne}(\pi)}. \end{aligned} \quad (3.10)$$

²⁰ Kasraoui and Zeng [64] call this the *partition graph* associated to π ; Mansour [75, Definition 3.50] calls it the *standard representation* of π .

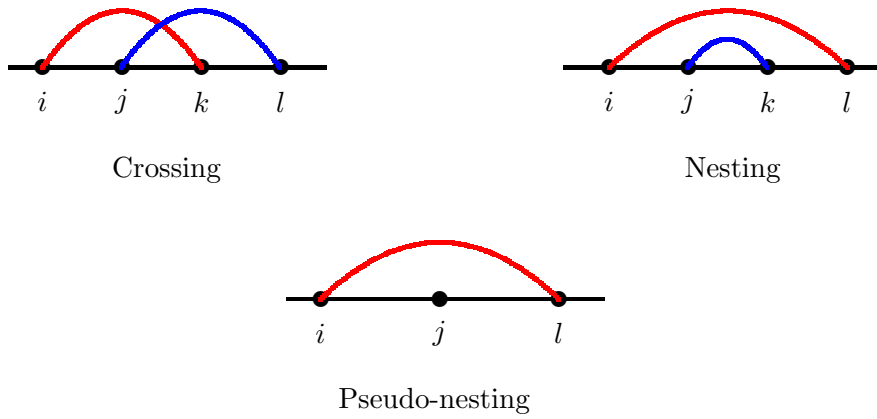


Figure 4: Crossing, nesting and pseudo-nesting for set partitions.

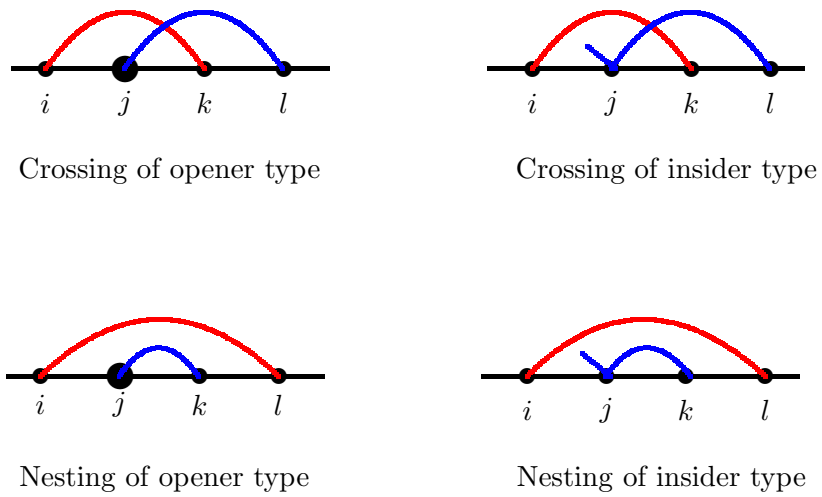


Figure 5: Refined categories of crossing and nesting for set partitions. Here a large circle marks an opener.

These polynomials have a nice J-fraction, as we shall see.

But we can go farther, and refine the categories of crossing and nesting by analogy with what was done for permutations in Section 2.5. Let us say that a quadruplet $i < j < k < l$ forms a

- *crossing of opener type* (crop) if $(i, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and $(j, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and j is an opener;
- *crossing of insider type* (crin) if $(i, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and $(j, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and j is an insider;
- *nesting of opener type* (neop) if $(i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and $(j, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and j is an opener;
- *nesting of insider type* (nein) if $(i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and $(j, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and j is an insider.

See Figure 5. Please note that here the distinguished index j is the one in second position. The categories crop, crin, neop, nein for set partitions correspond, respectively, to ucrosscval, ucrosscdrise, unestcval, unestcdrise for permutations, under a mapping that will be discussed in Section 3.7 below.

Let us now define the refined polynomial

$$\begin{aligned}
& B_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, r) \\
&= \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} x_1^{m_1(\pi)} x_2^{m_{\geq 2}(\pi)} y_1^{\text{erecin}(\pi)} y_2^{\text{erecop}(\pi)} v_1^{\text{nerecin}(\pi)} v_2^{\text{nercop}(\pi)} \times \\
&\quad p_1^{\text{crin}(\pi)} p_2^{\text{crop}(\pi)} q_1^{\text{nein}(\pi)} q_2^{\text{neop}(\pi)} r^{\text{psne}(\pi)}. \tag{3.11}
\end{aligned}$$

(Thus, the variables y_1, v_1, p_1, q_1 are associated with insiders; y_2, v_2, p_2, q_2 are associated with openers; x_1 and r are associated with singletons; and x_2 can be interpreted as associated with closers.) These polynomials have a nice J-fraction:

Theorem 3.3 (J-fraction for set partitions, first p, q -generalization). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials $B_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, r)$ has the J-type continued fraction*

$$\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} B_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, r) t^n = \\
& \frac{1}{1 - x_1 t - \frac{x_2 y_2 t^2}{1 - (r x_1 + y_1) t - \frac{x_2 (p_2 y_2 + q_2 v_2) t^2}{1 - (r^2 x_1 + p_1 y_1 + q_1 v_1) t - \frac{x_2 (p_2^2 y_2 + q_2 [2]_{p_2, q_2} v_2) t^2}{1 - \dots}}}} \tag{3.12}
\end{aligned}$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_0 = x_1 \tag{3.13a}$$

$$\gamma_n = r^n x_1 + p_1^{n-1} y_1 + q_1 [n-1]_{p_1, q_1} v_1 \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \tag{3.13b}$$

$$\beta_n = x_2 (p_2^{n-1} y_2 + q_2 [n-1]_{p_2, q_2} v_2) \tag{3.13c}$$

We will prove this theorem in Section 7.2, as a special case of a more general result.

Note that β_n is homogeneous of degree $n - 1$ in the pair (p_2, q_2) . So if we multiply both p_2 and q_2 by C , this has the effect of multiplying β_n by C^{n-1} .

Note also that when $y_i = v_i$ (for $i = 1$ and/or 2), the weight $p_i^{n-1}y_i + q_i [n-1]_{p_i, q_i}v_i$ simplifies to $[n]_{p_i, q_i}y_i$. In this case the weights (3.13) are invariant under $p_i \leftrightarrow q_i$. (In particular, if $y_1 = v_1$ and $y_2 = v_2$, then the weights are invariant under the *independent* interchanges $p_1 \leftrightarrow q_1$ and $p_2 \leftrightarrow q_2$.) It would be interesting to find a bijective proof of these symmetries.

In particular, the specialization $y_1 = y_2 = v_1 = v_2$, $p_1 = p_2$, $q_1 = q_2$ and $r = 1$ of Theorem 3.3 was proven earlier by Kasraoui and Zeng [64, Proposition 4.1]. In this specialization, the symmetry $p \leftrightarrow q$ is also a consequence of Kasraoui–Zeng’s [64] bijection that interchanges crossings and nestings while preserving various other statistics.

When specialized to $x_1 = x_2$, $y_1 = y_2$, $v_1 = v_2$, $p_2 = rp_1$ and $q_2 = rq_1$, the J-fraction (3.12) arises as the contraction (1.3) of an S-fraction with polynomial coefficients:

Corollary 3.4 (S-fraction for set partitions, first p, q -generalization). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials $B_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, r)$ specialized to $x_1 = x_2$, $y_1 = y_2$, $v_1 = v_2$, $p_2 = rp_1$, $q_2 = rq_1$ has the S-type continued fraction*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} B_n(x, x, y, y, v, v, p, rp, q, rq, r) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{yt}{1 - \frac{rxt}{1 - \frac{(py + qv)t}{1 - \frac{r^2xt}{1 - \frac{(p^2y + q [2]_{p,q}v)t}{1 - \dots}}}}}}}} \quad (3.14)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = r^{k-1}x \quad (3.15a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = p^{k-1}y + q [k-1]_{p,q}v \quad (3.15b)$$

Remark. Josuat-Vergès and Rubey [62, Theorem 1.2] have given an explicit formula for $[x^k] B_n(x, x, 1, 1, 1, 1, 1, 1, q, q, 1)$, which enumerates the partitions of $[n]$ with k blocks according to the number of nestings (or crossings). This formula is analogous to, but more complicated than, the Touchard–Riordan formula for perfect matchings given in (4.28) below. ■

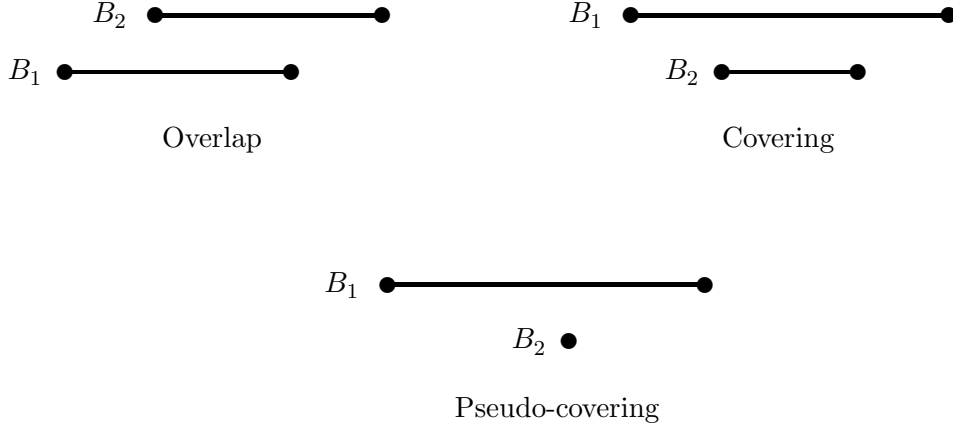


Figure 6: Overlap, covering and pseudo-covering for set partitions. The line segments represent the intervals $[\min B_1, \max B_1]$ and $[\min B_2, \max B_2]$. Only the smallest and largest elements of each block are shown explicitly with a dot.

3.4 Second p, q -generalization: Overlaps and coverings

We can form a different type of p, q -generalization by looking at the crossings and nestings of entire blocks rather than nearest-neighbor edges. We say that blocks B_1 and B_2 of π form

- an *overlap* if $\min B_1 < \min B_2 < \max B_1 < \max B_2$;
- a *covering* if $\min B_1 < \min B_2 < \max B_2 < \max B_1$;
- a *pseudo-covering* if $\min B_1 < \min B_2 = \max B_2 < \max B_1$ (so that here B_2 is a singleton).

See Figure 6. We write $ov(\pi)$, $cov(\pi)$ and $pscov(\pi)$ for the number of overlaps, coverings and pseudo-coverings in π , respectively.

Let us also observe that $pscov(\pi) = psne(\pi)$: for if $B_2 = \{j\}$ is a singleton and $\min B_1 < j < \max B_1$, then there is precisely one edge $(i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ with $i, l \in B_1$ such that $i < j < l$. So pseudo-coverings and pseudo-nestings are two different names for the same quantity.

Let us now define two related quantities:

$$ovin(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{insiders}} \#\{(B_1, B_2) : j \in B_2 \text{ and } \min B_1 < j < \max B_1 < \max B_2\} \quad (3.16a)$$

$$covin(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{insiders}} \#\{(B_1, B_2) : j \in B_2 \text{ and } \min B_1 < j < \max B_2 < \max B_1\} \quad (3.16b)$$

Here j is explicitly required to be an insider of the block B_2 (not an opener). Let us stress, however, that *both* possible inequalities of $\min B_1$ and $\min B_2$ are allowed, with opposite effect:

- If $\min B_1 < \min B_2$, then the pair (B_1, B_2) contributing to ovin (resp. covin) is an overlap (resp. covering).
- If $\min B_1 > \min B_2$, then the pair (B_1, B_2) contributing to ovin (resp. covin) is a covering (resp. overlap).

The motivation for these somewhat strange definitions will become apparent in Section 3.9.

Along with these definitions, we can introduce a different notion of record that is better adapted to overlaps and coverings. Recall that j is an exclusive record of π if it is either an opener or an insider and its right neighbor (within its block) sticks out farther to the right than any previous right neighbor as we read the graph \mathcal{G}_π from left to right. Let us now say that j is a *block-record* if it is either an opener or an insider and its *block* sticks out farther to the right than any *block* containing a vertex $< j$. That is, j is a block-record if it is an opener or insider of a block B and there does not exist a block B' satisfying $\min B' < j < \max B < \max B'$. We write $\text{brec}(\pi)$ for the number of block-records in π ; and more specifically, we write $\text{brecin}(\pi)$ for the number of insiders that are block-records, $\text{brecop}(\pi)$ for the number of openers that are block-records, $\text{nbrecin}(\pi)$ for the number of insiders that are not block-records, and $\text{nbrecop}(\pi)$ for the number of openers that are not block-records. In Section 3.9 we will reinterpret the notion of block-record in terms of coverings.

We now define a polynomial that is analogous to (3.11) but uses block-records, overlaps, coverings and pseudo-coverings in place of exclusive records, crossings, nestings and pseudo-nestings:

$$\begin{aligned} B_n^{(2)}(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, r) \\ = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} x_1^{m_1(\pi)} x_2^{m_{\geq 2}(\pi)} y_1^{\text{brecin}(\pi)} y_2^{\text{brecop}(\pi)} v_1^{\text{nbrecin}(\pi)} v_2^{\text{nbrecop}(\pi)} \times \\ p_1^{\text{ovin}(\pi)} p_2^{\text{ov}(\pi)} q_1^{\text{covin}(\pi)} q_2^{\text{cov}(\pi)} r^{\text{pscov}(\pi)}. \end{aligned} \quad (3.17)$$

It turns out that these polynomials are not merely *analogous* to (3.11); they are *identical* to (3.11):

Theorem 3.5. *We have*

$$B_n^{(2)}(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, r) = B_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, r). \quad (3.18)$$

We will prove this theorem in Sections 7.2 and 7.3, by showing that both polynomials have the same J-fraction (3.12)/(3.13). It would be interesting to find a direct bijective proof of the identity (3.18).

Historical remark. Our introduction of overlaps and coverings is inspired by the work of Flajolet and Schott [50] and Claesson [21]. Flajolet and Schott considered

nonoverlapping partitions (i.e. partitions with no overlaps) and gave [50, eq. (27)] a J-fraction for the weight $x^{|\pi|}$, i.e. (3.12)/(3.13) reinterpreted using Theorem 3.5 and then specialized to $x_1 = x_2 = x$, $y_1 = y_2 = v_1 = v_2 = 1$, $p_1 = 1$, $p_2 = 0$ and $q_1 = q_2 = r = 1$: namely, $\gamma_n = x + n$ and $\beta_n = x$. Claesson considered *monotone* partitions (i.e. partitions with no coverings) and constructed a bijection between them and nonoverlapping partitions [21, Proposition 6]; he also related them to permutations that avoid certain generalized patterns. To our knowledge, no one has heretofore considered giving weights (other than 0 or 1) to overlaps and coverings. ■

3.5 Some useful identities

Before proceeding further, let us record some useful identities that relate the statistics that have just been introduced.

To begin with, we have the trivial identities

$$\text{erecop}(\pi) + \text{nerecop}(\pi) = \text{brecop}(\pi) + \text{nbrecop}(\pi) \quad (3.19a)$$

$$\text{erecin}(\pi) + \text{nerecin}(\pi) = \text{brecin}(\pi) + \text{nbrecin}(\pi) \quad (3.19b)$$

in which both sides express the total number of openers (resp. insiders).

Somewhat less trivially, we have:

Lemma 3.6 (Crossings + nestings = overlaps + coverings). *We have*

$$\text{crop}(\pi) + \text{neop}(\pi) = \text{ov}(\pi) + \text{cov}(\pi) \quad (3.20a)$$

$$\text{crin}(\pi) + \text{nein}(\pi) = \text{ovin}(\pi) + \text{covin}(\pi) \quad (3.20b)$$

The proof of Lemma 3.6 is not difficult, but we defer it to Section 3.9, where it will arise naturally as a special case of a more general identity (see Lemma 3.11).

Finally, we have:

Lemma 3.7 (Crossings and nestings modulo 2). *We have*

$$\text{cr}(\pi) = \text{crin}(\pi) + \text{crop}(\pi) = \text{ov}(\pi) \pmod{2} \quad (3.21a)$$

$$\text{crin}(\pi) + \text{neop}(\pi) = \text{cov}(\pi) \pmod{2} \quad (3.21b)$$

$$\text{crop}(\pi) + \text{nein}(\pi) = \text{ov}(\pi) + \text{ovin}(\pi) + \text{covin}(\pi) \pmod{2} \quad (3.21c)$$

$$\text{ne}(\pi) = \text{nein}(\pi) + \text{neop}(\pi) = \text{cov}(\pi) + \text{ovin}(\pi) + \text{covin}(\pi) \pmod{2} \quad (3.21d)$$

PROOF. We first prove (3.21a). Each pair of crossing arcs (i, k) and (j, l) must belong to a pair of distinct non-singleton blocks, call them B_1 and B_2 where $\min B_1 < \min B_2$; and the pair (B_1, B_2) must form either an overlap (i.e. $\min B_1 < \min B_2 < \max B_1 < \max B_2$) or a covering (i.e. $\min B_1 < \min B_2 < \max B_2 < \max B_1$). So we shall consider pairs of blocks (B_1, B_2) of these two types, and for each such pair we shall count modulo 2 the number of pairs of crossing arcs between B_1 and B_2 .

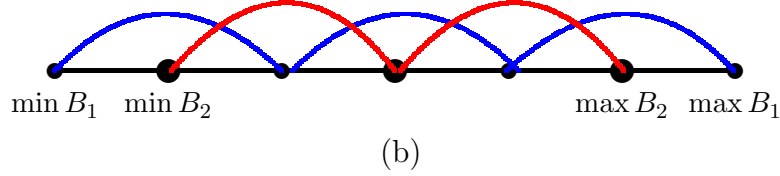
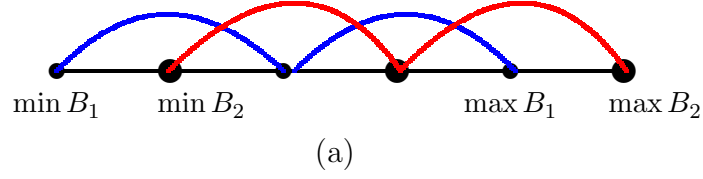


Figure 7: Situation in the proof of Lemma 3.7, when the pair (B_1, B_2) forms (a) an overlap or (b) a covering.

Suppose first that the pair (B_1, B_2) forms an overlap. Then (see Figure 7a) each arc of B_1 is crossed either zero or two times by an arc of B_2 , except for the arc of B_1 that is crossed by the opener arc of B_2 , which is crossed only once. So the total number of crossing pairs of B_1 with B_2 is odd.

Now suppose that the pair (B_1, B_2) forms a covering. Then (see Figure 7b) each arc of B_1 is crossed either zero or two times by an arc of B_2 , except for the two arcs of B_1 that are crossed by the opener and closer arcs of B_2 , which are each crossed only once. So the total number of crossing pairs of B_1 with B_2 is even.

Summing over all pairs (B_1, B_2) gives (3.21a).

Then (3.21b,c,d) are an immediate consequence of (3.21a) and (3.20a,b). \square

3.6 Third and fourth p, q -generalizations: Crossings, nestings, overlaps and coverings

Let us now try to go even farther, by introducing a ridiculously general polynomial that includes *both* crossing-nesting and overlap-covering statistics, and *both* exclusive-record and block-record statistics:

$$\begin{aligned}
& \tilde{B}_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, y'_1, y'_2, v'_1, v'_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, p'_1, p'_2, q'_1, q'_2, r) \\
&= \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} x_1^{m_1(\pi)} x_2^{m_{\geq 2}(\pi)} y_1^{\text{erecin}(\pi)} y_2^{\text{erecop}(\pi)} v_1^{\text{nerecin}(\pi)} v_2^{\text{nerecop}(\pi)} \times \\
&\quad (y'_1)^{\text{brein}(\pi)} (y'_2)^{\text{breop}(\pi)} (v'_1)^{\text{nbreicn}(\pi)} (v'_2)^{\text{nbreicop}(\pi)} \times \\
&\quad p_1^{\text{crin}(\pi)} p_2^{\text{crop}(\pi)} q_1^{\text{nein}(\pi)} q_2^{\text{neop}(\pi)} \times \\
&\quad (p'_1)^{\text{ovin}(\pi)} (p'_2)^{\text{ov}(\pi)} (q'_1)^{\text{covin}(\pi)} (q'_2)^{\text{cov}(\pi)} r^{\text{psne}(\pi)}. \tag{3.22}
\end{aligned}$$

Of course, this polynomial is much too general to admit a J-fraction with polynomial coefficients; indeed, even the specialization $y'_1 = y'_2 = v'_1 = v'_2 = 1$ and $p_1 = p_2 = q_1 = q_2 = p'_1 = q'_1 = 1$ does not admit such a J-fraction.²¹ Nevertheless, there are some specializations of (3.22) with a surprisingly large number of independent variables that do have nice J-fractions. However, it turns out that they have nice J-fractions because they are really just the polynomial (3.11) in disguise.

Before explaining how all this comes about, let us first note some simple homogeneities that arise as a result of the identities (3.19)–(3.21):

- (a) Multiplying y_1 and v_1 by C is equivalent to multiplying y'_1 and v'_1 by C .
- (b) Multiplying y_2 and v_2 by C is equivalent to multiplying y'_2 and v'_2 by C .
- (c) Multiplying p_1 and q_1 by C is equivalent to multiplying p'_1 and q'_1 by C .
- (d) Multiplying p_2 and q_2 by C is equivalent to multiplying p'_2 and q'_2 by C .
- (e) Multiplying p'_2 by $\epsilon = \pm 1$ is equivalent to multiplying p_1 and p_2 by ϵ .
- (f) Multiplying q'_2 by $\epsilon = \pm 1$ is equivalent to multiplying p_1 and q_2 by ϵ .

In particular, in the specializations that will be considered:

- (a₁) Setting $y_1 = v_1 = C$ is equivalent to setting $y_1 = v_1 = 1$ and then multiplying y'_1 and v'_1 by C .
- (a₂) Setting $y'_1 = v'_1 = C$ is equivalent to setting $y'_1 = v'_1 = 1$ and then multiplying y_1 and v_1 by C .

Similarly,

- (b₁) Setting $y_2 = v_2 = C$ is equivalent to setting $y_2 = v_2 = 1$ and then multiplying y'_2 and v'_2 by C .
- (b₂) Setting $y'_2 = v'_2 = C$ is equivalent to setting $y'_2 = v'_2 = 1$ and then multiplying y_2 and v_2 by C .

Likewise,

- (c₁) Setting $p_1 = q_1 = C$ is equivalent to setting $p_1 = q_1 = 1$ and then multiplying p'_1 and q'_1 by C .
- (c₂) Setting $p'_1 = q'_1 = C$ is equivalent to setting $p'_1 = q'_1 = 1$ and then multiplying p_1 and q_1 by C .

²¹ The first coefficients of the J-fraction are

$$\gamma_0 = x_1, \quad \beta_1 = x_2 y_2, \quad \gamma_1 = r x_1 + y_1, \quad \beta_2 = x_2 (p'_2 y_2 + q'_2 v_2),$$

but then

$$\gamma_2 = r^2 x_1 + \frac{p'_2 (y_1 v_2 + y_2 v_1) + q'_2 (y_1 y_2 + v_1 v_2)}{p'_2 y_2 + q'_2 v_2}$$

is not a polynomial.

(d₁) Setting $p_2 = q_2 = C$ is equivalent to setting $p_2 = q_2 = 1$ and then multiplying p'_2 and q'_2 by C .

(d₂) Setting $p'_2 = q'_2 = C$ is equivalent to setting $p'_2 = q'_2 = 1$ and then multiplying p_2 and q_2 by C .

And more generally,

(e/f) Setting $p'_2 = \epsilon C$ and $q'_2 = \widehat{\epsilon} C$ with $\epsilon, \widehat{\epsilon} \in \{-1, 1\}$ is equivalent to setting $p'_2 = q'_2 = 1$ and then multiplying p_1 by $\epsilon \widehat{\epsilon}$, p_2 by ϵC , and q_2 by $\widehat{\epsilon} C$.

So, in making these specializations, we might as well take $C = 1$ to simplify the formulae, while remembering that the results actually generalize to arbitrary C .

We now have:

Theorem 3.8 (Four equivalent specializations of \widetilde{B}_n). *The following specializations of the polynomial $\widetilde{B}_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, y'_1, y'_2, v'_1, v'_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, p'_1, p'_2, q'_1, q'_2, r)$ are equal:*

(i) $y'_1 = v'_1 = 1, y'_2 = v'_2 = 1, p'_1 = q'_1 = 1, p'_2 = q'_2 = 1$.

(ii) $y_1 = v_1 = 1, y_2 = v_2 = 1, p_1 = q_1 = 1, p_2 = q_2 = 1$ (and then dropping primes).

(iii) $y'_1 = v'_1 = 1, y_2 = v_2 = 1, p'_1 = q'_1 = 1, p_2 = q_2 = 1$ (and then dropping primes).

(iv) $y_1 = v_1 = 1, y'_2 = v'_2 = 1, p_1 = q_1 = 1, p'_2 = q'_2 = 1$ (and then dropping primes).

Here the specialization (i) is just the polynomial B_n defined in (3.11), while the specialization (ii) is the polynomial $B_n^{(2)}$ defined in (3.17); and the equality of these two specializations was already stated in Theorem 3.5. Now Theorem 3.8 asserts that the specializations (iii) and (iv) are also equal to these. Note the logic: we can choose to count insiders either by crossings, nestings and exclusive records [specializations (i) and (iii)] or by overlaps, coverings and block-records [(ii) and (iv)]; and we can *independently* choose to count openers either by crossings, nestings and exclusive records [(i) and (iv)] or by overlaps, coverings and block-records [(ii) and (iii)]. No matter which of the four choices we make, we obtain the same polynomial. We will prove this theorem in Sections 7.2–7.4, by showing that all four polynomials have the same J-fraction (3.12)/(3.13). It would be interesting to find a direct bijective proof of these identities.

3.7 First master J-fraction

But we can go much farther, and obtain a polynomial in four infinite families of indeterminates $\mathbf{a} = (\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{b} = (\mathbf{b}_\ell)_{\ell \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{d} = (\mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{e} = (\mathbf{e}_\ell)_{\ell \geq 0}$ that will have a nice J-fraction and that will include $\widetilde{B}_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, r)$ [defined in (3.11)] as a specialization.²² The basic idea is that, rather than counting the *total*

²² In our original version of this master J-fraction, the weights \mathbf{a}, \mathbf{d} were factorized in the form $\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'} = \mathbf{a}_\ell^{(1)} \mathbf{a}_{\ell'}^{(2)}$, etc. We thank Andrew Elvey Price for suggesting the generalization in which this factorization is avoided. This generalization will play a key role in our analysis of perfect matchings (see the proofs of Theorems 4.1 and 4.4 below).

numbers of quadruplets $i < j < k < l$ that form crossings or nestings, we should instead count the number of crossings or nestings that use a particular vertex j in second (or sometimes third) position, and then attribute weights to the vertex j depending on those values.

More precisely, we define

$$\text{cr}(j, \pi) = \#\{i < j < k < l: (i, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi \text{ and } (j, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi\} \quad (3.23a)$$

$$\text{ne}(j, \pi) = \#\{i < j < k < l: (i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi \text{ and } (j, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi\} \quad (3.23b)$$

Note that $\text{cr}(j, \pi)$ and $\text{ne}(j, \pi)$ can be nonzero only when j is either an opener or an insider; and summing over those j gives the refined categories of crossings and nestings:

$$\text{crop}(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{openers}} \text{cr}(j, \pi) \quad (3.24a)$$

$$\text{crin}(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{insiders}} \text{cr}(j, \pi) \quad (3.24b)$$

$$\text{neop}(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{openers}} \text{ne}(j, \pi) \quad (3.24c)$$

$$\text{nein}(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{insiders}} \text{ne}(j, \pi) \quad (3.24d)$$

In addition, let us define

$$\text{qne}(j, \pi) = \#\{i < j < l: (i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi\}; \quad (3.25)$$

we call this a *quasi-nesting* of the vertex j . Please note that here j can be a vertex of any type (but of course it must belong to a block that is different from the one containing i and l). When j is a singleton, this gives the pseudo-nestings:

$$\text{psne}(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{singletons}} \text{qne}(j, \pi). \quad (3.26)$$

When j is an opener or an insider, we have simply

$$\text{qne}(j, \pi) = \text{cr}(j, \pi) + \text{ne}(j, \pi), \quad (3.27)$$

so no new information is obtained. And finally, when j is a closer, $\text{qne}(j, \pi)$ counts the number of times that the closer j occurs in *third* position in a crossing or nesting: when $(i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ is a pair contributing to $\text{qne}(j, \pi)$, and $(h, j) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$, then we have either $h < i < j < l$ (so that the quadruplet is a crossing) or $i < h < j < l$ (so that the quadruplet is a nesting), but we do not keep track of which one it is.

We now introduce four infinite families of indeterminates $\mathbf{a} = (\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{b} = (\mathbf{b}_\ell)_{\ell \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{d} = (\mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{e} = (\mathbf{e}_\ell)_{\ell \geq 0}$ and define the polynomials $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ by

$$B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} \prod_{i \in \text{openers}} \mathbf{a}_{\text{cr}(i, \pi), \text{ne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{closers}} \mathbf{b}_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{insiders}} \mathbf{d}_{\text{cr}(i, \pi), \text{ne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{singletons}} \mathbf{e}_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)}. \quad (3.28)$$

These polynomials then have a beautiful J-fraction:

Theorem 3.9 (First master J-fraction for set partitions). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ has the J-type continued fraction*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - e_0 t - \frac{a_{00} b_0 t^2}{1 - (d_{00} + e_1) t - \frac{(a_{01} + a_{10}) b_1 t^2}{1 - (d_{01} + d_{10} + e_2) t - \frac{(a_{02} + a_{11} + a_{20}) b_2 t^2}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (3.29)$$

with coefficients

$$\gamma_n = \mathbf{d}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{e}_n \quad (3.30a)$$

$$\beta_n = \mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \mathbf{b}_{n-1} \quad (3.30b)$$

where

$$\mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} \mathbf{a}_{\ell, n-1-\ell} \quad (3.31)$$

and likewise for \mathbf{d} .

We will prove this theorem in Section 7.2.

Remarks. 1. It seems far from obvious (at least to us) why $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ depends on $\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}$ only via the combinations (3.30a,b). Of course, this behavior is a consequence of the bijection onto labeled Motzkin paths that we will use in Section 7.2 to prove Theorem 3.9. But it would be interesting to understand it combinatorially, directly at the level of set partitions.

2. It is unfortunate that the polynomial (3.28) treats openers and closers asymmetrically, but we do not see any way to avoid this. One can, of course, interchange the roles of openers and closers by passing to the reversed partition; indeed, this reversal will be employed, for technical reasons, in our proof in Section 7.2. But, whichever way one does it, one is left with a polynomial that uses doubly-indexed indeterminates $\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'}$ for one class and singly-indexed indeterminates \mathbf{b}_{ℓ} for the other. We do not see any way to obtain a continued fraction for a polynomial with two doubly-indexed indeterminates. (But perhaps we are missing something.) ■

Let us now show how to recover $B_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, r)$ as a specialization of $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$, and thus obtain Theorem 3.3 (and hence also Theorem 3.2)

as a special case of Theorem 3.9. The needed specialization is

$$\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'} = p_2^\ell \times \begin{cases} y_2 & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ q_2^{\ell'} v_2 & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (3.32a)$$

$$\mathbf{b}_\ell = x_2 \quad (3.32b)$$

$$\mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'} = p_1^\ell \times \begin{cases} y_1 & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ q_1^{\ell'} v_1 & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (3.32c)$$

$$\mathbf{e}_\ell = r^\ell x_1 \quad (3.32d)$$

Most of this is obvious: singletons get a weight $\mathbf{e}_\ell = r^\ell x_1$; we count blocks of size ≥ 2 at their closers, hence $\mathbf{b}_\ell = x_2$; and by (3.24) we count crossings and nestings at openers and insiders, which explains the factors p_2^ℓ and $q_2^{\ell'}$ in $\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'}$, and p_1^ℓ and $q_1^{\ell'}$ in $\mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'}$. Finally, recall that j is an exclusive record of π if it is not the largest element of its block (i.e. it is either an opener or an insider) and the next element in its block sticks out farther to the right than any right neighbor (within its block) of a vertex $< j$. In other words, j is an exclusive record if and only if it is an opener or insider and is not the second element in a nesting, i.e. $\text{ne}(j, \pi) = 0$. This explains the factor y_2 in $\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'}$ when $\ell' = 0$, and the factor v_2 when $\ell' \geq 1$; and likewise the factors y_1 and v_1 in $\mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'}$. This completes the proof that $B_n(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, r)$ is obtained from the specialization (3.32) of $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$. Inserting this specialization into (3.30)/(3.31) yields the weights (3.13).

Remarks. 1. The definitions (3.23)–(3.28) can be motivated by following closely the analogy with the first master J-fraction for permutations (Section 2.7). We begin by mapping set partitions into permutations as follows: Given a set partition $\pi \in \Pi_n$, we define the permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ such that the disjoint cycles of σ are the blocks of π , each traversed in increasing order (with the largest element of course followed by the smallest element). The mapping $\pi \mapsto \sigma$ is clearly a bijection of Π_n onto \mathfrak{S}_n^* , where \mathfrak{S}_n^* denotes the subset of \mathfrak{S}_n consisting of permutations in which each cycle of length $\ell \geq 2$ contains precisely one cycle peak (namely, the cycle maximum), one cycle valley (namely, the cycle minimum), $\ell - 2$ cycle double rises, and no cycle double falls. In particular, openers, closers, insiders and singletons of $\pi \in \Pi_n$ map, respectively, into cycle valleys, cycle peaks, cycle double rises and fixed points of $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n^*$.

We now define set-partition statistics that are simply the images of the permutation statistics ucross , unest , lcross , lnest and lev [cf. (2.74)/(2.76)] under this mapping.

The images of $\text{ucross}(j, \sigma)$ and $\text{unest}(j, \sigma)$ are precisely $\text{cr}(j, \pi)$ and $\text{ne}(j, \pi)$ as defined in (3.23). This explains why in the definitions (3.23) we have put the distinguished index in *second* position. More specifically, the images of ucrossval , ucrosscdrise , unestcval and unestcdrise are crop , crin , neop and nein , respectively.

As for lcross and lnest , we observe that the only lower arcs in the permutation σ are those that map the closer of a non-singleton block to that block's opener; therefore, the images of $\text{lcross}(k, \sigma)$ and $\text{lnest}(k, \sigma)$ are

$$\overline{\text{ov}}(k, \pi) = \#\{(B, B') : \min B < \min B' < k = \max B < \max B'\} \quad (3.33a)$$

$$\overline{\text{cov}}(k, \pi) = \#\{(B, B') : \min B' < \min B < k = \max B < \max B'\} \quad (3.33b)$$

which can be nonzero only when k is a closer (of a block B of size ≥ 2). And then

$$\text{ov}(\pi) = \sum_{k \in \text{closers}} \overline{\text{ov}}(k, \pi) \quad (3.34a)$$

$$\text{cov}(\pi) = \sum_{k \in \text{closers}} \overline{\text{cov}}(k, \pi) \quad (3.34b)$$

since we can count the block B at its closer. So the analogues of lcross and lnest are overlaps and coverings. (Of course, we here have only lcrosspeak and lnestpeak , since $\text{lcrosscdfall} = \text{lnestcdfall} = 0$ for $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n^*$.)

Finally, the image of $\text{lev}(j, \sigma)$ can be defined in two equivalent ways, corresponding to upper pseudo-nestings and lower pseudo-nestings. If j is a singleton, we define

$$\text{psne}(j, \pi) = \#\{i < j < k : (i, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi\}. \quad (3.35)$$

Summing over singletons j gives the total number of pseudo-nestings:

$$\text{psne}(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{singletons}} \text{psne}(j, \pi). \quad (3.36)$$

On the other hand, if j is a singleton we also define

$$\text{pscov}(j, \pi) = \#\{B : \min B < j < \max B\}. \quad (3.37)$$

Summing over singletons j gives the total number of pseudo-coverings:

$$\text{pscov}(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{singletons}} \text{pscov}(j, \pi). \quad (3.38)$$

But it is easy to see that $\text{psne}(j, \pi) = \text{pscov}(j, \pi)$, since for each block B satisfying $\min B < j < \max B$, there is precisely one edge $(i, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ with $i, k \in B$ that satisfies $i < j < k$. So these are simply two different names for the same object, which we have here called $\text{qne}(j, \pi)$ [cf. (3.25)], specialized now to the case in which j is a singleton.

The polynomial (3.28) is then obtained from the corresponding permutation polynomial (2.77) by specializing to $\mathbf{c} = \mathbf{0}$ (corresponding to the absence of cycle double falls for $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n^*$) and then further specializing \mathbf{b} to be independent of lcross and lnest .

Unfortunately, we are unable to employ this mapping to permutations to *prove* Theorem 3.9. The trouble is that it does not seem possible to encode the other property defining the subset $\mathfrak{S}_n^* \subseteq \mathfrak{S}_n$ — namely, that each cycle of length $\ell \geq 2$ contains precisely one cycle peak and one cycle valley — in the polynomial (2.77). Perhaps this problem could be alleviated by using instead the second master J-fraction for permutations [cf. (2.100)], which includes the statistic cyc : for we could substitute $\mathbf{a} \rightarrow \lambda^{-1}\mathbf{a}$ and $\mathbf{e} \rightarrow \lambda^{-1}\mathbf{e}$ and take $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$, thereby forcing $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n^*$. But then we would only be able to handle ucross and unest via their sum, which would amount to specializing (for instance) $v_1 = y_1$ and $v_2 = y_2$ in Theorem 3.2, which would be a severe limitation. Or perhaps Theorem 3.9 could be proven by finding a *different* bijection of set partitions onto a subclass of permutations. But we have been unable (thus far) to find a suitable bijection, so we are instead obliged to prove Theorem 3.9 by a direct argument on set partitions (see Section 7.2).

2. Instead of (3.32b) we could take, more generally, $\mathbf{b}_\ell = (q')^\ell x_2$. But it is easy to see that if k is a closer, then

$$\text{qne}(k, \pi) = \overline{\text{ov}}(k, \pi) + \overline{\text{cov}}(k, \pi) \quad (3.39)$$

[cf. (3.25) and (3.33)], so that

$$\sum_{k \in \text{closers}} \text{qne}(k, \pi) = \text{ov}(\pi) + \text{cov}(\pi) = \text{crop}(\pi) + \text{neop}(\pi) \quad (3.40)$$

[cf. (3.20a) and (3.34)]. So taking $\mathbf{b}_\ell = (q')^\ell x_2$ is equivalent to taking $\mathbf{b}_\ell = x_2$ and then multiplying p_2 and q_2 by q' . This can alternatively be seen by observing that, according to (3.30b), multiplying \mathbf{b}_ℓ by $(q')^\ell$ has the same effect on the J-fraction as multiplying $\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'}$ by $(q')^{\ell+\ell'}$. ■

3.8 First master S-fraction

We can also obtain a master S-fraction by specializing the parameters in Theorem 3.9. Indeed, the J-fraction (3.29)/(3.30) is the contraction (1.3) of the S-fraction

$$\frac{1}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{b}_0 t}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{a}_{00} t}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{b}_1 t}{1 - \frac{(\mathbf{a}_{01} + \mathbf{a}_{10}) t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (3.41)$$

with coefficients $\alpha_{2k-1} = \mathbf{b}_{k-1}$ and $\alpha_{2k} = \mathbf{a}_{k-1}^*$ if we choose \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e} so that

$$\mathbf{d}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{e}_n = \mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* + \mathbf{b}_n \quad \text{for all } n \geq 0. \quad (3.42)$$

There are many ways of doing this; the simplest is to set $\mathbf{e}_n = \mathbf{b}_n$ for all $n \geq 0$ and then choose \mathbf{a}, \mathbf{d} in any way such that

$$\mathbf{d}_{n-1}^* = \mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \quad \text{for all } n \geq 1. \quad (3.43)$$

Even this latter choice can be done in many ways; the simplest is to choose \mathbf{a} freely and then set $\mathbf{d} = \mathbf{a}$. These choices lead to the following result:

Theorem 3.10 (Master S-fraction for set partitions). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b})$ has the S-type continued fraction*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{b}_0 t}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{a}_{00} t}{1 - \frac{\mathbf{b}_1 t}{1 - \frac{(\mathbf{a}_{01} + \mathbf{a}_{10}) t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (3.44)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = \mathbf{b}_{k-1} \quad (3.45a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = \mathbf{a}_{k-1}^* \quad (3.45b)$$

$$\text{where } \mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} \mathbf{a}_{\ell, n-1-\ell}.$$

To obtain the S-fraction (3.14) from Theorem 3.10, we make the specializations

$$\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'} = p^\ell \times \begin{cases} y & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \\ q^{\ell'} v & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (3.46a)$$

$$\mathbf{b}_\ell = x \quad (3.46b)$$

3.9 Second master J-fraction

Let us now define a second master J-fraction, following the same scheme as in Section 3.7 but now using overlaps and coverings (as defined in Section 3.4) in place of crossings and nestings.

We begin by defining

$$\text{ov}(j, \pi) = \#\{(B_1, B_2): j \in B_2 \text{ and } \min B_1 < j < \max B_1 < \max B_2\} \quad (3.47a)$$

$$\text{cov}(j, \pi) = \#\{(B_1, B_2): j \in B_2 \text{ and } \min B_1 < j < \max B_2 < \max B_1\} \quad (3.47b)$$

Note that $\text{ov}(j, \pi)$ and $\text{cov}(j, \pi)$ can be nonzero only when j is either an opener or an insider (since $j \in B_2$ and $j < \max B_2$). If we sum over openers, then each block B_2 gets counted once (namely, with $j = \min B_2$), and we obtain the total numbers of overlaps and coverings:

$$\text{ov}(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{openers}} \text{ov}(j, \pi) \quad (3.48a)$$

$$\text{cov}(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{openers}} \text{cov}(j, \pi) \quad (3.48b)$$

On the other hand, if we sum over insiders, then we obtain the quantities ovin and covin defined in (3.16):

$$\text{ovin}(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{insiders}} \text{ov}(j, \pi) \quad (3.49a)$$

$$\text{covin}(\pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{insiders}} \text{cov}(j, \pi) \quad (3.49b)$$

Remark. Compare (3.24) with (3.48)/(3.49): we see that the total numbers of overlaps and coverings are *not* analogous to the total numbers of crossings and nestings; rather, they are analogous to the total numbers of crossings and nestings of *opener type*. ■

In addition, let us define

$$\text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \#\{B: B \not\ni j \text{ and } \min B < j < \max B\}. \quad (3.50)$$

We call this a *quasi-covering* of the vertex j ; please note that here j can be a vertex of any type. When j is a singleton, this gives the pseudo-coverings:

$$\sum_{j \in \text{singletons}} \text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \text{pscov}(\pi). \quad (3.51)$$

When j is an opener or an insider, we have simply

$$\text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \text{ov}(j, \pi) + \text{cov}(j, \pi), \quad (3.52)$$

so that in particular

$$\sum_{j \in \text{openers}} \text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \text{ov}(\pi) + \text{cov}(\pi) \quad (3.53a)$$

$$\sum_{j \in \text{insiders}} \text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \text{ovin}(\pi) + \text{covin}(\pi) \quad (3.53b)$$

And finally, when j is a closer, $\text{qcov}(j, \pi)$ counts the number of blocks B_1 that either overlap or cover the block B_2 whose closer is j ; in particular, we have

$$\sum_{j \in \text{closers}} \text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \text{ov}(\pi) + \text{cov}(\pi). \quad (3.54)$$

But the quantity $\text{qcov}(j, \pi)$ has already been introduced under a different name: we have in fact

$$\text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \text{qne}(j, \pi) \quad (3.55)$$

[cf. (3.25)], no matter what is the type of the vertex j . And this is easy to see: if a vertex j and a block B satisfy $j \notin B$ and $\min B < j < \max B$, then there is precisely one edge $(i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ with $i, l \in B$ that satisfies $i < j < l$. So quasi-nestings and quasi-coverings are just two different names for the same quantity. For future reference, let us record the relevant facts about this quantity:

Lemma 3.11 (Quasi-nestings of openers and insiders).

(a) *If j is an opener or an insider, we have*

$$\text{qne}(j, \pi) = \text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \text{cr}(j, \pi) + \text{ne}(j, \pi) = \text{ov}(j, \pi) + \text{cov}(j, \pi). \quad (3.56)$$

(b) We have

$$\sum_{j \in \text{openers}} \text{qne}(j, \pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{openers}} \text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \text{crop}(\pi) + \text{neop}(\pi) = \text{ov}(\pi) + \text{cov}(\pi) \quad (3.57a)$$

$$\sum_{j \in \text{insiders}} \text{qne}(j, \pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{insiders}} \text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \text{crin}(\pi) + \text{nein}(\pi) = \text{ovin}(\pi) + \text{covin}(\pi) \quad (3.57b)$$

$$\sum_{j \in \text{closers}} \text{qne}(j, \pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{closers}} \text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \text{crop}(\pi) + \text{neop}(\pi) = \text{ov}(\pi) + \text{cov}(\pi) \quad (3.57c)$$

$$\sum_{j \in \text{singletons}} \text{qne}(j, \pi) = \sum_{j \in \text{singletons}} \text{qcov}(j, \pi) = \text{psne}(\pi) + \text{pscov}(\pi) \quad (3.57d)$$

Here we have simply recalled (3.24), (3.27), (3.48), (3.49), (3.52), (3.54) and (3.55). Note that Lemma 3.11(b) refines Lemma 3.6, while Lemma 3.11(a) is a further refinement.

Let us now introduce four infinite families of indeterminates $\mathbf{a} = (\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{b} = (\mathbf{b}_{\ell})_{\ell \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{d} = (\mathbf{d}_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{e} = (\mathbf{e}_{\ell})_{\ell \geq 0}$ and define the polynomials $B_n^{(2)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ by

$$B_n^{(2)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} \prod_{i \in \text{openers}} \mathbf{a}_{\text{ov}(i, \pi), \text{cov}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{closers}} \mathbf{b}_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{insiders}} \mathbf{d}_{\text{ov}(i, \pi), \text{cov}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{singletons}} \mathbf{e}_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)}. \quad (3.58)$$

But it turns out that these polynomials $B_n^{(2)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ are not simply *analogues* of the polynomials $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ defined in Section 3.7; they *are* the polynomials $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ in disguise:

Theorem 3.12 (Second master J-fraction for set partitions). *The polynomials $B_n^{(2)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ defined in (3.58) are identical to the polynomials $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ defined in (3.28). In particular, their ordinary generating function has the same J-fraction (3.29)/(3.30).*

Indeed, we will prove this theorem in Section 7.3 by showing that the polynomials $B_n^{(2)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ have the J-fraction (3.29)/(3.30). It is an interesting open problem to find a natural bijection $\Pi_n \rightarrow \Pi_n$ that proves $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) = B_n^{(2)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ by mapping directly the relevant statistics. (One possibility, of course, is to use the bijection obtained by composing the two bijections to labeled Motzkin paths that will be constructed in Sections 7.2 and 7.3. But we do not know, at present, how to give a *simple* and *explicit* definition of this bijection.)

Let us now show how to recover $B_n^{(2)}(x_1, x_2, y_1, y_2, v_1, v_2, p_1, p_2, q_1, q_2, r)$ defined in (3.17) as a specialization of $B_n^{(2)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$, and thus obtain the J-fraction corresponding to Theorem 3.5 as a special case of Theorem 3.12. The needed specialization is

precisely (3.32), and the reasoning is very similar to that used in deriving (3.32). The only difference is that we now use overlaps and coverings in place of crossings and nestings, and block-records in place of exclusive records. We have defined block-records in such a way that j is a block-record if and only if it is an opener or insider and $\text{cov}(j, \pi) = 0$; so the reasoning used in deriving (3.32) applies verbatim, with nestings replaced by coverings.

3.10 Third and fourth master J-fractions

We now introduce some polynomials that mix the statistics that were used in the first and second master J-fractions (Sections 3.7 and 3.9). So introduce indeterminates $\mathbf{a} = (a_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{b} = (b_\ell)_{\ell \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{d} = (d_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{e} = (e_\ell)_{\ell \geq 0}$ as before, and define the polynomials $B_n^{(3)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ and $B_n^{(4)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ by

$$B_n^{(3)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} \prod_{i \in \text{openers}} a_{\text{ov}(i, \pi), \text{cov}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{closers}} b_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{insiders}} d_{\text{cr}(i, \pi), \text{ne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{singletons}} e_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)} \quad (3.59)$$

$$B_n^{(4)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} \prod_{i \in \text{openers}} a_{\text{cr}(i, \pi), \text{ne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{closers}} b_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{insiders}} d_{\text{ov}(i, \pi), \text{cov}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{singletons}} e_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)} \quad (3.60)$$

So $B^{(3)}$ employs overlaps and coverings for openers, and crossings and nestings for insiders, while $B^{(4)}$ does the reverse.

It turns out that the polynomials $B^{(3)}$ and $B^{(4)}$ are, like $B^{(2)}$, identical to the polynomials B_n defined in Section 3.7:

Theorem 3.13 (Third and fourth master J-fractions for set partitions). *The polynomials $B_n^{(3)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ and $B_n^{(4)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ defined in (3.59)/(3.60) are identical to the polynomials $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ defined in (3.28). In particular, their ordinary generating function has the same J-fraction (3.29)/(3.30).*

Indeed, we will prove this theorem in Section 7.4 by showing that the polynomials $B_n^{(3)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ and $B_n^{(4)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ have the J-fraction (3.29)/(3.30).

The polynomials defined in Theorem 3.8(iii,iv) are then obtained from $B_n^{(3,4)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ by the same specialization (3.32) that was used for B_n and $B_n^{(2)}$ in Sections 3.7 and 3.9, respectively; the reasoning is identical to that used there.

3.11 A remark on the Wachs–White statistics and inversion statistics

Wachs and White [106] have introduced four statistics on set partitions, which can be defined as follows:²³

$$\text{lb}(\pi) = \#\{(B_1, B_2, k) : \min B_1 < \min B_2 < k \in B_1\} \quad (3.61a)$$

$$\text{ls}(\pi) = \#\{(B_1, B_2, k) : \min B_1 < \min B_2 \leq k \in B_2\} \quad (3.61b)$$

$$\text{rb}(\pi) = \#\{(B_1, B_2, k) : \min B_1 < \min B_2 \text{ with } k \in B_1 \text{ and } k < \max B_2\} \quad (3.61c)$$

$$\text{rs}(\pi) = \#\{(B_1, B_2, k) : \min B_1 < \min B_2 \leq k < \max B_1 \text{ with } k \in B_2\} \quad (3.61d)$$

We can also modify the definition of ls to make it more closely analogous to that of lb , by removing the case $\min B_2 = k$:

$$\text{ls}'(\pi) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \#\{(B_1, B_2, k) : \min B_1 < \min B_2 < k \in B_2\} \quad (3.62a)$$

$$= \text{ls}(\pi) - \binom{|\pi|}{2}. \quad (3.62b)$$

The statistics lb and ls had been introduced earlier by Milne [77, Remark 4.13]: a triplet (B_1, B_2, k) contributing to lb (resp. ls) is called an *inversion* (resp. *dual inversion*) of π , and we also write $\text{inv}(\pi) = \text{lb}(\pi)$ and $\widetilde{\text{inv}}(\pi) = \text{ls}(\pi)$. See e.g. [110, section 3].

Wachs and White [106] called lb and ls the “easy” statistics, because it is straightforward to show that the coefficient array

$$S_{p,q}(n, k) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_{n,k}} q^{\text{lb}(\pi)} p^{\text{ls}(\pi)} \quad (3.63)$$

(where $\Pi_{n,k}$ denotes the partitions of $[n]$ with k blocks) satisfies the recurrence

$$S_{p,q}(n, k) = p^{k-1} S_{p,q}(n-1, k-1) + [k]_{p,q} S_{p,q}(n-1, k). \quad (3.64)$$

Equivalently, the coefficient array

$$S'_{p,q}(n, k) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_{n,k}} q^{\text{lb}(\pi)} p^{\text{ls}'(\pi)} = p^{-\binom{k}{2}} S_{p,q}(n, k) \quad (3.65)$$

satisfies the recurrence

$$S'_{p,q}(n, k) = S'_{p,q}(n-1, k-1) + [k]_{p,q} S'_{p,q}(n-1, k), \quad (3.66)$$

²³ Wachs and White [106] actually defined their statistics on words $\mathbf{w} = w_1 \cdots w_n \in [k]^n$. Now, words $\mathbf{w} \in [k]^n$ satisfying $w_i \leq \max_{1 \leq j < i} w_j + 1$ and $\max_{1 \leq i \leq n} w_i = k$ — termed *restricted growth functions* of length n and maximum k — are in bijection with partitions of $[n]$ with k blocks: we write $\pi = \{B_1, \dots, B_k\}$ where $\min B_1 < \min B_2 < \dots < \min B_k$, and set $w_i = r$ if $i \in B_r$. The statistics (3.61a–d) then arise by restricting the Wachs–White statistics to restricted growth functions and mapping them to set partitions via the bijection.

which shows in particular that the pair (lb, ls') has a symmetric distribution on $\Pi_{n,k}$.

By contrast with the “easy” statistics lb and ls , Wachs and White [106] called rb and rs the “hard” statistics, because there is no obvious way to prove a recurrence for them. Wachs and White nevertheless showed, by a nontrivial bijection, that the pair (rs, rb) is equidistributed on $\Pi_{n,k}$ with (lb, ls) .

Here we will show that, curiously, one of the “hard” statistics — namely, rs — has a simple interpretation in terms of our overlap and covering statistics:

Proposition 3.14. *For partitions $\pi \in \Pi_n$, we have*

$$\text{rs}(\pi) = \text{ov}(\tilde{\pi}) + 2 \text{cov}(\tilde{\pi}) + \text{covin}(\tilde{\pi}) + \text{pscov}(\tilde{\pi}) \quad (3.67)$$

where $\tilde{\pi}$ denotes the reversal of π , i.e. the image of π under the map $i \mapsto \tilde{i} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} n+1-i$.

We remark that ov , cov and pscov are manifestly reversal-invariant [i.e. $\text{ov}(\tilde{\pi}) = \text{ov}(\pi)$, etc.]. By contrast, ovin and covin are not reversal-invariant for $n \geq 5$, but their sum $\text{ovin} + \text{covin}$ is reversal-invariant by (3.53b).

As preparation for the proof of Proposition 3.14, we define reversals of the statistics (3.47):

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{\text{ov}}(k, \pi) &\stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \text{ov}(\tilde{k}, \tilde{\pi}) \\ &= \#\{(B_1, B_2): k \in B_1 \text{ and } \min B_1 < \min B_2 < k < \max B_2\} \end{aligned} \quad (3.68a)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \widetilde{\text{cov}}(k, \pi) &\stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \text{cov}(\tilde{k}, \tilde{\pi}) \\ &= \#\{(B_1, B_2): k \in B_2 \text{ and } \min B_1 < \min B_2 < k < \max B_1\} \end{aligned} \quad (3.68b)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \widetilde{\text{qcov}}(k, \pi) &\stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \text{qcov}(\tilde{k}, \tilde{\pi}) \\ &= \#\{B: B \not\ni k \text{ and } \min B < k < \max B\} \end{aligned} \quad (3.68c)$$

[The definition of $\widetilde{\text{qcov}}$ is in fact reversal-invariant, so that $\widetilde{\text{qcov}}(k, \pi) = \text{qcov}(k, \pi)$.]

PROOF OF PROPOSITION 3.14. In the definition of $\text{rs}(\pi)$, we separate the cases with $\min B_2 < k$ from those with $\min B_2 = k$:

$$\text{rs}(\pi) = \sum_{k \in \text{insiders} \cup \text{closers}} \widetilde{\text{cov}}(k, \pi) + \sum_{k \in \text{openers} \cup \text{singletons}} \widetilde{\text{qcov}}(k, \pi) \quad (3.69a)$$

$$= \sum_{k \in \text{insiders} \cup \text{openers}} \text{cov}(k, \tilde{\pi}) + \sum_{k \in \text{closers} \cup \text{singletons}} \text{qcov}(k, \tilde{\pi}) \quad (3.69b)$$

$$= \text{covin}(\tilde{\pi}) + \text{cov}(\tilde{\pi}) + [\text{ov}(\tilde{\pi}) + \text{cov}(\tilde{\pi})] + \text{pscov}(\tilde{\pi}) \quad (3.69c)$$

by (3.68b,c), (3.48b), (3.49b), (3.51) and (3.54). \square

Remark. Straightforward computation shows that lb , ls and rb — in contrast to rs — *cannot* be written as a linear combination of ov , cov , ovin , covin , ovinrev , covinrev , $\binom{|\pi|}{2}$, $n|\pi|$ and $\binom{n}{2}$ [where $\text{ovinrev}(\pi) = \text{ovin}(\tilde{\pi})$ and $\text{covinrev}(\pi) = \text{covin}(\tilde{\pi})$].

In fact, a linear combination $a_1\text{lb} + a_2\text{ls} + a_3\text{rb} + a_4\text{rs}$ can be written in this way *only* if $a_1 = a_2 = a_3 = 0$. To see this, for ls and rb it suffices to consider $n = 3$, while for lb and general linear combinations it suffices to consider $n = 4$. ■

We can now rederive an S-fraction for the generating polynomials associated to the q -Stirling numbers

$$S_q(n, k) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} S_{1,q}(n, k) = S'_{1,q}(n, k) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_{n,k}} q^{\text{lb}(\pi)}, \quad (3.70)$$

which was obtained some years ago by one of us [110, eq. (2.1)]. Indeed, using the Wachs–White equidistribution result $\text{lb} \sim \text{rs}$ together with the involution $\pi \mapsto \tilde{\pi}$ and the identity (3.67), and then applying the definition (3.17) and Theorem 3.5, we see that

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{k=0}^n S_q(n, k) x^k &\stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} x^{|\pi|} q^{\text{lb}(\pi)} = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} x^{|\pi|} q^{\text{rs}(\pi)} = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} x^{|\pi|} q^{\text{rs}(\tilde{\pi})} \\ &= B_n^{(2)}(x, x, 1, 1, 1, 1, 1, q, q, q^2, q) = B_n(x, x, 1, 1, 1, 1, 1, q, q, q^2, q). \end{aligned} \quad (3.71)$$

Specializing Corollary 3.4 to $y = v = 1$, $p = 1$ and $r = q$, we recover the S-fraction of [110, eq. (2.1)]:

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{k=0}^n S_q(n, k) x^k t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{t}{1 - \frac{qxt}{1 - \frac{(1+q)t}{1 - \frac{q^2xt}{1 - \frac{(1+q+q^2)t}{1 - \dots}}}}}}}} \quad (3.72)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = q^{k-1}x \quad (3.73a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = [k]_q \quad (3.73b)$$

On the other hand, in the same paper Zeng also obtained [110, eqn. (2.2)] an S-fraction for the generating polynomials associated to the modified q -Stirling numbers

$$\tilde{S}_q(n, k) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} q^{\binom{k}{2}} S_{1,q}(n, k) = S_{q,1}(n, k) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_{n,k}} q^{\text{ls}(\pi)}. \quad (3.74)$$

Namely,²⁴

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{k=0}^n \tilde{S}_q(n, k) x^k t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{(1 + (q-1)x)t}{1 - \frac{q^2 xt}{1 - \frac{(1 + q(q-1)x)t}{1 - \frac{q^4 xt}{1 - \frac{(1 + q^2(q-1)x)t}{1 - \dots}}}}}}}} \quad (3.75)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = q^{2k-2} x \quad (3.76a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = (1 + q^{k-1}(q-1)x) [k]_q \quad (3.76b)$$

Unfortunately, we do *not* know how to obtain this S-fraction as a special case of our results here; its combinatorial meaning remains quite mysterious (at least to us). We leave it as an open problem to understand (3.75)/(3.76) as a special case of some more general result. Please note that (3.75)/(3.76) differs from all of the other continued fractions in this paper in that the coefficient (3.76b) contains a term with a minus sign; this may be an indication of its combinatorial subtlety.

3.12 A remark on the Ehrenborg–Readdy intertwining statistic

Ehrenborg and Readdy [40, section 6] have introduced a statistic on set partitions that can be defined as follows: For $i, j \in \mathbb{Z}$, let $\text{int}(i, j)$ denote the open interval

$$\text{int}(i, j) = \{m \in \mathbb{Z} : \min(i, j) < m < \max(i, j)\}. \quad (3.77)$$

By definition $\text{int}(i, j) = \text{int}(j, i)$. Then, for two disjoint nonempty finite subsets $B, C \subset \mathbb{Z}$, define the *intertwining number*

$$\iota(B, C) = \#\{(b, c) \in B \times C : \text{int}(b, c) \cap (B \cup C) = \emptyset\}. \quad (3.78)$$

Of course $\iota(B, C) = \iota(C, B)$. This intertwining number can be interpreted graphically as follows: Draw solid (resp. dashed) arcs between consecutive elements of B (resp. C) as in the usual graphical representation of a set partition; but now also draw a solid (resp. dashed) arc from the smallest element of B (resp. C) to $-\infty$, and a solid (resp. dashed) arc from the largest element of B (resp. C) to $+\infty$. Then $\iota(B, C)$ is the total number of crossings between solid and dashed arcs, with the understanding that the

²⁴ The formula following [110, eqn. (2.2)] has a typographical error: it should read $\lambda_{2n-1} = aq^{2n-2}$, not aq^{2n} . Note that the correct formula is given in [110, eqn. (2.11)].

Also, the definition [110, eqn. (1.2)] has a typographical error: the coefficient should be q^k , not q^{k-1} .

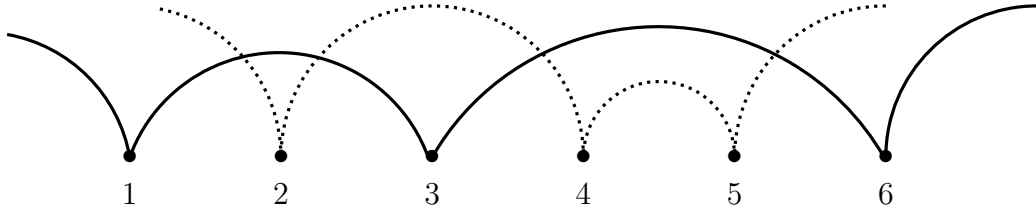


Figure 8: Computation of the interwining number of the partition $\pi = \{\{1, 3, 6\}, \{2, 4, 5\}\}$: we have $\iota(\pi) = 4$.

arcs are drawn so that two arcs to $-\infty$, or two arcs to $+\infty$, never cross (see Figure 8). Indeed, if $b \in B$ and $c \in C$ (let's say for concreteness that $b < c$) and there is no point of B or C between b and c , then the arc upwards from b (whether to the next element of B or to $+\infty$) necessarily intersects the arc downwards from c (whether to the previous element of C or to $-\infty$); but if there is an element of B and/or C between b and c , then these arcs will not intersect. It is now easy to see that $\iota(B, C) \geq 1$.

Now, for a partition $\pi = \{B_1, \dots, B_k\}$ of $[n]$, define the *intertwining number*

$$\iota(\pi) = \sum_{1 \leq i < j \leq k} \iota(B_i, B_j) \quad (3.79)$$

(of course this quantity does not depend on how the blocks of π are ordered). Since $\iota(B_i, B_j) \geq 1$ for all $i \neq j$, we have $\iota(\pi) \geq \binom{|\pi|}{2}$; we therefore define the *reduced intertwining number*

$$\iota'(\pi) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \iota(\pi) - \binom{|\pi|}{2} \geq 0. \quad (3.80)$$

Ehrenborg and Readdy showed [40, Proposition 6.3] that

$$S_q(n, k) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_{n, k}} q^{\iota'(\pi)} \quad (3.81a)$$

$$\tilde{S}_q(n, k) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_{n, k}} q^{\iota(\pi)} \quad (3.81b)$$

(Note that their q -Stirling numbers $S[n, k]$ correspond to our $\tilde{S}_q(n, k)$.) Here we would like to observe that their intertwining number can be written as a combination of our crossing, nesting, overlap and covering statistics:

Proposition 3.15. *For partitions $\pi \in \Pi_n$, we have*

$$\iota'(\pi) = \text{cr}(\pi) + \text{ov}(\pi) + \text{cov}(\pi) + \text{pscov}(\pi) \quad (3.82a)$$

$$= \text{crin}(\pi) + 2 \text{crop}(\pi) + \text{neop}(\pi) + \text{psne}(\pi). \quad (3.82b)$$

PROOF. Consider a pair of blocks B, C contributing to the sum (3.79), and let us fix the order by assuming that $\min B < \min C$. For each block, there are three types of

arcs: internal arcs, the arc to $-\infty$, and the arc to $+\infty$. So there are nine types of possible crossings:

1,2,3) The arc from $-\infty$ to $\min B$ cannot intersect any arc of C .

4,5) The arc from $-\infty$ to $\min C$ will always intersect an arc of B (namely, an internal arc of B in case $\min B < \min C < \max B$, and the arc from $\max B$ to $+\infty$ in case $\min B \leq \max B < \min C$). So there are $\binom{|\pi|}{2}$ intersections of this type, which compensates the term subtracted in (3.80).

6) The arc from $\max B$ to $+\infty$ will intersect an internal arc of C in case $\min C < \max B < \max C$, or in other words $\min B < \min C < \max B < \max C$, i.e. blocks B and C form an overlap.

7) The arc from $\max B$ to $+\infty$ cannot intersect the arc from $\max C$ to $+\infty$.

8) The arc from $\max C$ to $+\infty$ will intersect an internal arc of B in case $\min B < \max C < \max B$, or in other words $\min B < \min C \leq \max C < \max B$ i.e. blocks B and C form a covering or a pseudo-covering.

9) Finally, the intersections between internal arcs of different blocks give (when summed over pairs B, C) the contribution $\text{cr}(\pi)$.

Putting this all together proves (3.82a).

Then (3.82b) follows by using the trivial identity $\text{cr} = \text{crop} + \text{crin}$ along with the identities $\text{ov} + \text{cov} = \text{crop} + \text{neop}$ [cf. (3.20a)] and $\text{pscov} = \text{psne}$ [cf. before (3.16)].

□

Applying now (3.81a) and (3.82b) together with the definition (3.11), we see that

$$\sum_{k=0}^n S_q(n, k) x^k = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} x^{|\pi|} q^{\iota'(\pi)} = B_n(x, x, 1, 1, 1, 1, 1, q, q^2, 1, q, q), \quad (3.83)$$

which differs from (3.71) by interchanging $(p_1, p_2) \leftrightarrow (q_1, q_2)$. Since the S-fraction of Corollary 3.4 is invariant under $p \leftrightarrow q$ when $y = v = 1$, we re-obtain the S-fraction (3.72)/(3.73).

Remarks. 1. It would be interesting to try to find a statistic “dual” to ι' that would give the two-variable polynomials $S_{p,q}(n, k)$ or $S'_{p,q}(n, k)$.

2. Sagan [88] has defined statistics maj and $\widehat{\text{maj}}$ for set partitions, which have the distributions $S_q(n, k)$ and $\widetilde{S}_q(n, k)$, respectively. He also discussed the joint distributions (inv, maj) , $(\text{inv}, \widehat{\text{maj}})$ and $(\text{maj}, \widehat{\text{maj}})$, each of which satisfies a different (p, q) -generalization of the Stirling recurrence: $(\text{inv}, \widehat{\text{maj}})$ corresponds to (3.64), while the other two are new. It does not seem that any of the three have nice continued fractions, except when $p = 1$ or $q = 1$. ■

3.13 Counting connected components; indecomposable set partitions

Let us now show how to extend our set-partition polynomials to count also the connected components of a set partition. As a corollary, we will obtain continued fractions for indecomposable set partitions. The method is identical, *mutatis mutandis*, to the one used in Section 2.13 to count connected components in permutations.

A *divider* of a set partition $\pi \in \Pi_n$ is an index $i \in [n]$ such that the interval $[1, i]$ is a union of blocks of π ; equivalently, the complementary interval $[i + 1, n]$ is a union of blocks of π . Clearly, when $n = 0$ (hence $\pi = \emptyset$) there are no dividers; when $n \geq 1$, the index n is always a divider, and there may or may not be others. A *connected component* (or *atomic part*) of $\pi \in \Pi_n$ [78, A127743] is a minimal nonempty interval $[i, j] \subseteq [n]$ such that the intervals $[1, i - 1]$, $[i, j]$ and $[j + 1, n]$ are all unions of blocks of π . If $1 \leq i_1 < i_2 < \dots < i_k = n$ are the dividers of π , then $[1, i_1]$, $[i_1 + 1, i_2]$, \dots , $[i_{k-1} + 1, i_k]$ are its connected components. So the number of connected components equals the number of dividers; we write it as $\text{cc}(\pi)$. Thus $\text{cc}(\emptyset) = 0$; for $n \geq 1$ we have $1 \leq \text{cc}(\pi) \leq n$, with $\text{cc}(\pi) = n$ if and only if π is the partition into singletons. A set partition π is called *indecomposable* (or *atomic*) if $\text{cc}(\pi) = 1$ [78, A087903/A074664].²⁵

In any of the set-partition polynomials studied thus far, we can insert an additional factor $\zeta^{\text{cc}(\pi)}$. This affects the continued fractions as follows:

Theorem 3.16 (Counting connected components in set partitions). *Consider any of the polynomials (3.4), (3.6), (3.11), (3.17), (3.28), (3.58), (3.59), or (3.60), and insert an additional factor $\zeta^{\text{cc}(\pi)}$. Then the continued fractions associated to the ordinary generating functions are modified as follows: in each S-fraction, multiply α_1 by ζ ; in each J-fraction, multiply γ_0 and β_1 by ζ .*

This result has an easy proof in our labeled-Motzkin-paths formalism, as we shall remark in Section 7.2. But it also has a simple “renewal theory” explanation, as follows: Given set partitions $\pi = \{B_1, \dots, B_k\} \in \Pi_m$ and $\pi' = \{B'_1, \dots, B'_l\} \in \Pi_n$, let us define their *concatenation* $\pi|\pi' \in \Pi_{m+n}$ as $\{B_1, \dots, B_k, B'_1 + m, \dots, B'_l + m\}$. Multiple concatenations are defined in the obvious way. Then every set partition can be written uniquely as a concatenation of (zero or more) indecomposable set partitions (namely, π restricted to its connected components, with indices relabeled to start at 1). Now let P_n be any set-partition polynomial based on statistics that are additive under concatenation, and include also a factor $\zeta^{\text{cc}(\pi)}$; and let P_n^{ind} be the corresponding polynomial with the sum restricted to indecomposable set partitions (without the factor ζ). Now define the ordinary generating functions

$$f(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n t^n \quad (3.84a)$$

$$g(t) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} P_n^{\text{ind}} t^n \quad (3.84b)$$

Then it is immediate from the foregoing that

$$f(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \zeta g(t)}. \quad (3.85)$$

²⁵ **Warning:** We were tempted to use here the term “irreducible”, but we felt obliged to avoid it because this term has been used previously for *at least two distinct* other classes of partitions! Several authors [8,9] [75, p. 16] call a set partition “irreducible” if no proper subinterval of $[1, n]$ is a union of blocks [78, A099947]; this is more restrictive than our condition that no *initial* subinterval $[1, i]$ with $i \leq n - 1$ is a union of blocks. On the other hand, the term “irreducible” is sometimes used [78, A055105] to denote yet another class of partitions (also called “unsplittable”). This latter class is equinumerous with the indecomposable partitions as defined here [19] but gives rise to a different triangular array when refined according to the number of blocks.

Moreover, all of the statistics that have been considered here are indeed additive under concatenation: it is easy to see that this holds for statistics based on counting blocks by size, on classifying elements as opener/closer/insider/singleton, on the record or block-record structure, on crossings and nestings, or on overlaps and coverings. Theorem 3.16 is an immediate consequence.

These considerations also allow us to deduce continued fractions for the ordinary generating functions of the polynomials P_n^{ind} associated to indecomposable set partitions. Indeed, it follows immediately from (3.85) that if $f(t)$ is the ordinary generating function associated to all set partitions (without factors $\zeta^{\text{cc}(\pi)}$), then $g(t) = 1 - 1/f(t)$ is the ordinary generating function associated to indecomposable set partitions. The continued fractions transform according to the same formulae (2.111)–(2.114) as for indecomposable permutations.

4 Perfect matchings

4.1 S-fraction

Euler showed [46, section 29] that the generating function of the odd semifactorials can be represented as an S-type continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (2n-1)!! t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{1t}{1 - \frac{2t}{1 - \frac{3t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (4.1)$$

with coefficients $\alpha_n = n$.²⁶ Since $(2n-1)!!$ enumerates perfect matchings of a $2n$ -element set, it is natural to seek polynomial refinements of this sequence that enumerate perfect matchings of $[2n]$ according to some natural statistic(s). Note that we can regard a perfect matching either as a special type of set partition (namely, one in which all blocks are of size 2) or as a special type of permutation (namely, one in which all cycles are of length 2, i.e. a fixed-point-free involution). We write these two interpretations as $\pi \in \mathcal{M}_{2n} \subseteq \Pi_{2n}$ and $\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n} \subseteq \mathfrak{S}_{2n}$, respectively.

Inspired by (4.1), let us introduce the polynomials $M_n(x, y, u, v)$ defined by the

²⁶ See also [16, Section 2.6] for a combinatorial proof of (4.1) based on a counting of height-labeled Dyck paths.

continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} M_n(x, y, u, v) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{(y+v)t}{1 - \frac{(x+2u)t}{1 - \frac{(y+3v)t}{1 - \frac{(x+4u)t}{1 - \frac{(y+5v)t}{1 - \dots}}}}}}}} \quad (4.2)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = x + (2k-2)u \quad (4.3a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = y + (2k-1)v \quad (4.3b)$$

Clearly $M_n(x, y, u, v)$ is a homogeneous polynomial of degree n . Since $M_n(1, 1, 1, 1) = (2n-1)!!$, it is plausible to expect that $M_n(x, y, u, v)$ enumerates perfect matchings of $[2n]$ according to some natural trivariate statistic.

To show this, let us adopt the interpretation of perfect matchings as fixed-point-free involutions. We recall the classification of indices i of a permutation σ into cycle peaks, cycle valleys, cycle double rises, cycle double falls, and fixed points. Note that if σ is an involution, then it has no cycle double rises or cycle double falls; moreover, i is a cycle peak (resp. cycle valley) if and only if it is the largest (resp. smallest) element of a 2-element cycle.

Now let σ be a fixed-point-free involution on $[2n]$, so that it consists of n 2-element cycles. For each cycle, we look at its largest element (i.e. the cycle peak) and classify it into four types:

- *even cycle-peak antirecord* (ecpar) [i.e. i is even and is an antirecord];
- *odd cycle-peak antirecord* (ocpar) [i.e. i is odd and is an antirecord];
- *even cycle-peak non-antirecord* (ecpnar) [i.e. i is even and is not an antirecord];
- *odd cycle-peak non-antirecord* (ocpnar) [i.e. i is odd and is not an antirecord].

(Note that a cycle peak cannot be a record, but that it can be an antirecord.) Similarly, we classify the smallest element of each cycle (i.e. the cycle valley) into four types:

- *even cycle-valley record* (ecvr) [i.e. i is even and is a record];
- *odd cycle-valley record* (ocvr) [i.e. i is odd and is a record];
- *even cycle-valley non-record* (ecvnr) [i.e. i is even and is not a record];
- *odd cycle-valley non-record* (ocvnr) [i.e. i is odd and is not a record].

(Note that a cycle valley cannot be an antirecord, but that it can be a record.)

This classification of indices also has an easy translation into the interpretation of perfect matchings as set partitions in which every block has size 2. Obviously “cycle valley” is equivalent to “opener”, and “cycle peak” to “closer”. Moreover, an opener is a record if and only if it is an exclusive record in the sense defined in Section 3.1: that is, an opener j that is paired with a closer k ($> j$) is a record if and only if there does not exist an opener $i < j$ that is paired with a closer $l > k$. In terms of the nesting statistic (3.23b), an opener j is a record if and only if $\text{ne}(j, \pi) = 0$. Similarly, a closer k that is paired with an opener j ($< k$) is an antirecord if and only if there does not exist a closer $l > k$ that is paired with an opener $i < j$; or in other words $\text{ne}(j, \pi) = 0$. (Note that this latter equation involves j , not k .)

With these preliminaries, we can now state our result:

Theorem 4.1 (S-fraction for perfect matchings). *The polynomials $M_n(x, y, u, v)$ defined by (4.2)/(4.3) have the combinatorial interpretation*

$$M_n(x, y, u, v) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n}} x^{\text{ecpar}(\sigma)} y^{\text{ocpar}(\sigma)} u^{\text{ecpnr}(\sigma)} v^{\text{ocpnr}(\sigma)} \quad (4.4a)$$

$$= \sum_{\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n}} x^{\text{ocvr}(\sigma)} y^{\text{ecvr}(\sigma)} u^{\text{ocvnr}(\sigma)} v^{\text{ecvnr}(\sigma)}, \quad (4.4b)$$

where the sums run over fixed-point-free involutions of $[2n]$.

The interpretations (4.4a) and (4.4b) are of course trivially equivalent under the bijection $\sigma \mapsto R \circ \sigma \circ R$ with $R(i) = 2n + 1 - i$, which preserves the cycle structure of a permutation but interchanges even with odd, peak with valley, and record with antirecord.

Comparing the definitions (2.2)/(2.3) and (4.2)/(4.3), we see immediately that

$$M_n(x, y, u, v) = P_n(x, y + v, 2u, 2v). \quad (4.5)$$

We leave it as an open problem to give a bijective proof of this identity based on the combinatorial interpretations (2.4) [or (2.5)] and (4.4).

Some special cases of Theorem 4.1 were previously known, notably:

- The polynomials [37, Proposition 7] [84, Corollaire 15] [71–74, 90] [14, Project 6.6.1] [78, A185411/A185410/A156919]

$$M_n(x, y, x, y) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n}} x^{\text{ecp}(\sigma)} y^{\text{ocp}(\sigma)}, \quad (4.6)$$

which count perfect matchings of $[2n]$ according to the number of pairs that have even or odd largest entries.

- The polynomials [78, A127160]

$$M_n(x, x, u, u) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n}} x^{\text{arec}(\sigma)} u^{n - \text{arec}(\sigma)}, \quad (4.7)$$

which count fixed-point-free involutions of $[2n]$ according to the number of antirecords (or records). These polynomials arise in several contexts:

- $M_n(c, c, 1, 1)$ are the even moments μ_{2n} of the associated Hermite polynomials $H_n(x; c)$ [34].
- $xM_n(x + 1, x + 1, 1, 1)$ counts rooted maps embeddable on an orientable surface (of arbitrary genus), with n edges, with respect to the number of vertices [4, Theorem 3] [78, A053979].
- Similarly, $2^n xM_n(\frac{x}{2} + 1, \frac{x}{2} + 1, 1, 1)$ counts rooted maps embeddable on an arbitrary (orientable or non-orientable) surface (of arbitrary genus), with n edges, with respect to the number of vertices [67, Theorem 2].
- $xM_n(x + 1, x + 1, 1, 1)$ also arises in a problem concerning extreme-value distributions in probability theory [3].

Note that in this case the continued-fraction coefficients simplify to

$$\alpha_n = x + (n - 1)u, \quad (4.8)$$

as we are no longer distinguishing between even and odd. This special case of Theorem 4.1 can also be deduced from Theorem 2.21: since a fixed-point-free involution is simply a cycle-alternating permutation in which each cycle has exactly one cycle valley, we set $\lambda = 1/y_1$ and take $y_1 \rightarrow 0$; then (2.133) becomes (4.8).

We can prove Theorem 4.1 as a corollary of our master J-fraction for set partitions (Theorem 3.9) by specializing variables; the reasoning is similar to our treatment of cycle-alternating permutations in Section 2.15. We need a simple combinatorial lemma:

Lemma 4.2 (Openers in perfect matchings). *Let $\pi \in \mathcal{M}_{2n} \subseteq \Pi_{2n}$ be a perfect matching of $[2n]$, and let $j \in [2n]$ be an opener of π . Then:*

- (a) j has opposite parity to $\text{cr}(j, \pi) + \text{ne}(j, \pi)$.
- (b) j is a record if and only if $\text{ne}(j, \pi) = 0$.

PROOF. (a) By (3.27) and (3.25) we have

$$\text{cr}(j, \pi) + \text{ne}(j, \pi) = \text{qne}(j, \pi) = \#\{i < j < l: (i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi\}. \quad (4.9)$$

Let $m \geq 0$ be the number of pairs $(i, i') \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ with both $i, i' < j$. Since j is an opener, it is paired with some element $j' > j$. Therefore, every element $i < j$ is either paired with another element $i' < j$ or else with some element $l > j$. Hence

$$j - 1 = \#\{i: i < j\} = \text{cr}(j, \pi) + \text{ne}(j, \pi) + 2m, \quad (4.10)$$

which proves (a).

(b) was already observed in the paragraph preceding Theorem 4.1. \square

PROOF OF THEOREM 4.1. In (3.28) we set $\mathbf{d} = \mathbf{e} = \mathbf{0}$ to force π to be a perfect matching. We also set $\mathbf{b}_\ell = 1$ for all $\ell \geq 0$ (i.e. we do not weight closers). So the

weight is simply $\prod_{i \in \text{openers}} a_{\text{cr}(i,\pi), \text{ne}(i,\pi)}$. By Lemma 4.2(a,b) we obtain the polynomial (4.4b) if we set

$$a_{\ell, \ell'} = \begin{cases} x & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \text{ and } \ell \text{ is even} \\ y & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \text{ and } \ell \text{ is odd} \\ u & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \text{ and } \ell + \ell' \text{ is even} \\ v & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \text{ and } \ell + \ell' \text{ is odd} \end{cases} \quad (4.11)$$

Then

$$a_{n-1}^* \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} a_{\ell, n-1-\ell} = \begin{cases} x + (n-1)u & \text{if } n \text{ is odd} \\ y + (n-1)v & \text{if } n \text{ is even} \end{cases} \quad (4.12)$$

With these specializations, the J-fraction (3.29) becomes the S-fraction (4.2) if we identify $B_{2n} = M_n$ and replace t^2 by t . This proves (4.4b); and (4.4a) then follows by the trivial bijection noted earlier. \square

We can alternatively prove Theorem 4.1 as a corollary of our second master S-fraction for cycle-alternating permutations (Theorem 2.23). Here we use the interpretation of perfect matchings as fixed-point-free involutions (i.e. permutations in which every cycle is of length 2); and we observe that a fixed-point-free involution of $[2n]$ is simply a cycle-alternating permutation of $[2n]$ in which the number of cycles is maximal (namely, n). So we can obtain perfect matchings from Theorem 2.23 by replacing $t \rightarrow t/\lambda$ and then taking $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$. The details are as follows. We begin with a simple combinatorial lemma, which is a close analogue of Lemma 4.2:

Lemma 4.3. *Let $\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n} \subseteq \mathfrak{S}_{2n}$ be a fixed-point-free involution of $[2n]$. If $i \in [2n]$ is a cycle peak of σ , then:*

- (a) i has the same parity as $\text{lcross}(i, \sigma) + \text{lnest}(i, \sigma)$.
- (b) i is an antirecord if and only if $\text{lnest}(i, \sigma) = 0$.

If $i \in [2n]$ is a cycle valley of σ , then:

- (c) i has the opposite parity from $\text{ucross}(i, \sigma) + \text{unest}(i, \sigma)$.
- (d) i is a record if and only if $\text{unest}(i, \sigma) = 0$.

PROOF. (a) Let $k \in [2n]$ be a cycle peak of σ , so that $\sigma(k) < k$. Then the set $\{j: j < k\}$, which has cardinality $k-1$, can be partitioned as

$$\{\sigma(k)\} \cup \{j < k: \sigma(j) < k\} \cup \{j < \sigma(k): \sigma(j) > k\} \cup \{\sigma(k) < j < k: \sigma(j) > k\}. \quad (4.13)$$

The first of these sets has cardinality 1; the second has even cardinality; the third has cardinality $\text{lnest}(k, \sigma)$; and the fourth has cardinality $\text{lcross}(k, \sigma)$.

(b) Again let $k \in [2n]$ be a cycle peak, so that $\sigma(k) < k$. Then k fails to be an antirecord in case there exists an index $l > k$ such that $\sigma(l) < \sigma(k)$. But this is precisely the statement that $\text{lnest}(k, \sigma) > 0$.

(c,d) The proofs are similar. \square

SECOND PROOF OF THEOREM 4.1. We start from the polynomial (2.137) for cycle-alternating permutations, multiply by λ^{-n} , and take $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$: this restricts the sum to fixed-point-free involutions. We also set $\mathbf{a}_\ell = 1$ for all $\ell \geq 0$ (i.e. we do not weight cycle valleys). The result is

$$\lim_{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} \lambda^{-n} \widehat{Q}_{2n}(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \lambda) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n}} \prod_{i \in \text{cpeak}} \mathbf{b}_{\text{lcross}(i, \sigma), \text{lnest}(i, \sigma)}. \quad (4.14)$$

By Lemma 4.3(a,b) we obtain the polynomial (4.4a) if we set

$$\mathbf{b}_{\ell, \ell'} = \begin{cases} x & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \text{ and } \ell \text{ is even} \\ y & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \text{ and } \ell \text{ is odd} \\ u & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \text{ and } \ell + \ell' \text{ is even} \\ v & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \text{ and } \ell + \ell' \text{ is odd} \end{cases} \quad (4.15)$$

Then

$$\mathbf{b}_{n-1}^* = \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} \mathbf{b}_{\ell, n-1-\ell} = \begin{cases} x + (n-1)u & \text{if } n \text{ is odd} \\ y + (n-1)v & \text{if } n \text{ is even} \end{cases} \quad (4.16)$$

From (2.139) we have

$$\lim_{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} \lambda^{-1} \alpha_n = \mathbf{b}_{n-1}^*, \quad (4.17)$$

which completes the proof. \square

Remarks. 1. It is natural to try amalgamating (4.4a,b) into an eight-variable polynomial

$$\widehat{M}_n(x, y, u, v, \bar{x}, \bar{y}, \bar{u}, \bar{v}) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n}} x^{\text{ecpar}(\sigma)} y^{\text{ocpar}(\sigma)} u^{\text{ecpnr}(\sigma)} v^{\text{ocpnr}(\sigma)} \times \bar{x}^{\text{ocvr}(\sigma)} \bar{y}^{\text{ecvr}(\sigma)} \bar{u}^{\text{ocvnr}(\sigma)} \bar{v}^{\text{ecvnr}(\sigma)}, \quad (4.18)$$

so that $\widehat{M}_n(x, y, u, v, 1, 1, 1, 1) = M_n(x, y, u, v)$ and $\widehat{M}_n(1, 1, 1, 1, \bar{x}, \bar{y}, \bar{u}, \bar{v}) = M_n(\bar{x}, \bar{y}, \bar{u}, \bar{v})$. But it seems that we can get a J-fraction with polynomial coefficients only if we specialize to six variables: either $u = x$ and $v = y$, or $\bar{u} = \bar{x}$ and $\bar{v} = \bar{y}$. And in these cases we get an S-fraction: for instance,

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \widehat{M}_n(x, y, u, v, \bar{x}, \bar{y}, \bar{x}, \bar{y}) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{x\bar{x}t}{1 - \frac{(y+v)\bar{y}t}{1 - \frac{(x+2u)\bar{x}t}{1 - \frac{(y+3v)\bar{y}t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (4.19)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = [x + (2k-2)u] \bar{x} \quad (4.20a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = [y + (2k-1)v] \bar{y} \quad (4.20b)$$

But this is actually an immediate consequence of Theorem 4.1, once we realize that the number of odd (resp. even) cycle valleys is equal to the number of even (resp. odd) cycle peaks; so if we count cycle valleys only by parity and not by record status, then \bar{x} simply multiplies x and u , and \bar{y} multiplies y and v .

2. One could try to go farther, by introducing the *disjoint* classification of each 2-element cycle into 16 categories according to the status of its cycle peak (ecpar, ocpar, ecpnar, ocpnar) and its cycle valley (ecvr, ocvr, ecvnr, ocvnr), and then defining a *homogeneous* 16-variable polynomial. We do not know whether any interesting continued fractions can be obtained from this polynomial. ■

4.2 p, q -generalizations

Let us now generalize the four-variable polynomial $M_n(x, y, u, v)$ by adding weights for crossings and nestings as in Section 2.5. Note that if $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ is an involution (not necessarily fixed-point-free), we trivially have $\text{ucross}(\sigma) = \text{lcross}(\sigma)$ and $\text{unest}(\sigma) = \text{lnest}(\sigma)$; so we write them simply as $\text{cr}(\sigma)$ and $\text{ne}(\sigma)$, respectively. These quantities of course coincide with $\text{cr}(\pi)$ and $\text{ne}(\pi)$ as defined in Section 3.3 for the matching (not necessarily perfect) $\pi \in \Pi_n$ that corresponds to the involution $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$; and we here have $\text{cr}(\pi) = \text{crop}(\pi)$ and $\text{ne}(\pi) = \text{neop}(\pi)$ since a matching has no insiders. We now define

$$M_n(x, y, u, v, p, q) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n}} x^{\text{ecpar}(\sigma)} y^{\text{ocpar}(\sigma)} u^{\text{ecpnar}(\sigma)} v^{\text{ocpnar}(\sigma)} p^{\text{cr}(\sigma)} q^{\text{ne}(\sigma)} \quad (4.21a)$$

$$= \sum_{\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n}} x^{\text{ocvr}(\sigma)} y^{\text{ecvr}(\sigma)} u^{\text{ocvnr}(\sigma)} v^{\text{ecvnr}(\sigma)} p^{\text{cr}(\sigma)} q^{\text{ne}(\sigma)}, \quad (4.21b)$$

where the sums run over fixed-point-free involutions of $[2n]$, and the equality of (4.21a) and (4.21b) again follows from the bijection $\sigma \mapsto R \circ \sigma \circ R$ (which preserves the numbers of crossings and nestings).

In fact, we can go farther, by distinguishing crossings and nestings according to whether the element in second position is even or odd. That is, let us say that a crossing or nesting $i < j < k < l$ is *even* (resp. *odd*) if j is even (resp. odd). We denote by $\text{ecr}(\sigma)$, $\text{ocr}(\sigma)$, $\text{ene}(\sigma)$, $\text{one}(\sigma)$ the numbers of even crossings, odd crossings, even nestings and odd nestings, respectively. We then define

$$M_n(x, y, u, v, p_+, p_-, q_+, q_-) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n}} x^{\text{ecpar}(\sigma)} y^{\text{ocpar}(\sigma)} u^{\text{ecpnar}(\sigma)} v^{\text{ocpnar}(\sigma)} p_+^{\text{ocr}(\sigma)} p_-^{\text{ecr}(\sigma)} q_+^{\text{one}(\sigma)} q_-^{\text{ene}(\sigma)} \quad (4.22a)$$

$$= \sum_{\sigma \in \mathcal{I}_{2n}} x^{\text{ocvr}(\sigma)} y^{\text{ecvr}(\sigma)} u^{\text{ocvnr}(\sigma)} v^{\text{ecvnr}(\sigma)} p_+^{\text{ecr}(\sigma)} p_-^{\text{ocr}(\sigma)} q_+^{\text{ene}(\sigma)} q_-^{\text{one}(\sigma)}, \quad (4.22b)$$

where the two formulae are again related by $\sigma \mapsto R \circ \sigma \circ R$. We find:

Theorem 4.4 (S-fraction for perfect matchings, p, q -generalization). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials $M_n(x, y, u, v, p_+, p_-, q_+, q_-)$ has the S-type continued fraction*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} M_n(x, y, u, v, p_+, p_-, q_+, q_-) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{(p_+y + q_+v)t}{1 - \frac{(p_-^2x + q_- [2]_{p_-, q_-} u)t}{1 - \frac{(p_+^3y + q_+ [3]_{p_+, q_+} v)t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (4.23)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = p_-^{2k-2}x + q_- [2k-2]_{p_-, q_-} u \quad (4.24a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = p_+^{2k-1}y + q_+ [2k-1]_{p_+, q_+} v \quad (4.24b)$$

Note that if $u = x$ and/or $v = y$, then the weights (4.24) simplify to $\alpha_{2k-1} = [2k-1]_{p_-, q_-} x$ and $\alpha_{2k} = [2k]_{p_+, q_+} y$, respectively. For the special case $x = y = u = v$, $p_+ = p_-$ and $q_+ = q_-$, the S-fraction (4.23) was obtained previously by Kasraoui and Zeng [64] (see also [11, p. 3280]).

The proof of Theorem 4.4 is a straightforward extension of the method used for Theorem 4.1:

PROOF OF THEOREM 4.4. In (3.28) we set $\mathbf{d} = \mathbf{e} = \mathbf{0}$ to force π to be a perfect matching. We also set $\mathbf{b}_\ell = 1$ for all $\ell \geq 0$ (i.e. we do not weight closers). So the weight is simply $\prod_{i \in \text{openers}} \mathbf{a}_{\text{cr}(i, \pi), \text{ne}(i, \pi)}$. By Lemma 4.2(a,b) we obtain the polynomial (4.22b) if we set

$$\mathbf{a}_{\ell, \ell'} = \begin{cases} p_-^\ell q_-^{\ell'} x & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \text{ and } \ell \text{ is even} \\ p_+^\ell q_+^{\ell'} y & \text{if } \ell' = 0 \text{ and } \ell \text{ is odd} \\ p_-^\ell q_-^{\ell'} u & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \text{ and } \ell + \ell' \text{ is even} \\ p_+^\ell q_+^{\ell'} v & \text{if } \ell' \geq 1 \text{ and } \ell + \ell' \text{ is odd} \end{cases} \quad (4.25)$$

Then

$$\mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} \mathbf{a}_{\ell, n-1-\ell} = \begin{cases} p_-^{n-1}x + q_- [n-1]_{p_-, q_-} u & \text{if } n \text{ is odd} \\ p_+^{n-1}y + q_+ [n-1]_{p_+, q_+} v & \text{if } n \text{ is even} \end{cases} \quad (4.26)$$

With these specializations, the J-fraction (3.29) becomes the S-fraction (4.23) if we identify $B_{2n} = M_n$ and replace t^2 by t . \square

Remarks. 1. Comparing the continued fractions (2.60)/(2.61) and (4.23)/(4.24), we see that

$$\begin{aligned} M_n(x, y, u, v, p_+, p_-, q_+, q_-) \\ = P_n(x, p_+y + q_+v, (p_- + q_-)u/q_-, (p_+ + q_+)v, p_+^2, p_-^2, q_+^2, q_-^2), \end{aligned} \quad (4.27)$$

which generalizes (4.5). We leave it as an open problem to find a bijective proof of (4.27).

Let us observe a curious fact about (4.27). One might think that the appearance of the *squares* of p_{\pm}, q_{\pm} on the right-hand side of (4.27) comes from the fact that each crossing or nesting in a perfect matching corresponds to *two* crossings or nestings — one upper and one lower — in the corresponding permutation. But this does *not* seem to be the correct explanation, since the meaning of the subscripts + and – is different on the two sides of (4.27): in M_n it distinguishes even from odd, while in P_n it distinguishes upper from lower. So we really do not understand the combinatorial meaning of (4.27).

2. An explicit expression for $M_n(1, 1, 1, 1, p, 1)$ — which counts perfect matchings of $[2n]$ by the number of crossings (or nestings) — was found implicitly by Touchard [102] and explicitly by Riordan [86] (see also [11, 61, 79, 81, 85]):

$$M_n(1, 1, 1, 1, p, 1) = (1 - p)^{-n} \sum_{k=0}^n (-1)^k t_{n,k} p^{k(k+1)/2} \quad (4.28)$$

where

$$t_{n,k} = \binom{2n}{n+k} - \binom{2n}{n+k+1} = \frac{2k+1}{n+k+1} \binom{2n}{n+k} = \frac{2k+1}{2n+1} \binom{2n+1}{n+k+1} \quad (4.29)$$

are a variant of the ballot numbers. No explicit expression for $M_n(1, 1, 1, 1, p, q)$ seems to be known. ■

4.3 Master S-fraction

Finally, we can get a master S-fraction for perfect matchings by specializing the first master J-fraction for set partitions (Theorem 3.9). We introduce two infinite families of indeterminates $\mathbf{a} = (a_{\ell, \ell'})_{\ell, \ell' \geq 0}$ and $\mathbf{b} = (b_{\ell})_{\ell \geq 0}$, and define the polynomials $M_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b})$ by

$$M_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = \sum_{\pi \in \mathcal{M}_{2n}} \prod_{i \in \text{openers}} a_{\text{cr}(i, \pi), \text{ne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{closers}} b_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)}, \quad (4.30)$$

where $\text{cr}(i, \pi)$, $\text{ne}(i, \pi)$ and $\text{qne}(i, \pi)$ are as defined in (3.23a,b) and (3.25). Of course, $M_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = B_{2n}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0})$ since setting $\mathbf{d} = \mathbf{e} = \mathbf{0}$ in (3.28) is precisely what is needed to restrict the summation to perfect matchings. From Theorem 3.9 we immediately deduce:

Theorem 4.5 (Master S-fraction for perfect matchings). *The ordinary generating function of the polynomials $M_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b})$ has the S-type continued fraction*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} M_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{a_{00} b_0 t}{1 - \frac{(a_{01} + a_{10}) b_1 t}{1 - \frac{(a_{02} + a_{11} + a_{20}) b_2 t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (4.31)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_n = \mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \mathbf{b}_{n-1} \quad (4.32)$$

where $\mathbf{a}_{n-1}^* \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=0}^{n-1} \mathbf{a}_{\ell, n-1-\ell}$.

Alternatively, we can prove Theorem 4.5 as a corollary of our second master S-fraction for cycle-alternating permutations (Theorem 2.23), using the interpretation of perfect matchings as fixed-point-free involutions:

SECOND PROOF OF THEOREM 4.5. We start by applying the bijection $\sigma \mapsto R \circ \sigma \circ R$ to (2.137): this interchanges valleys with peaks, and upper with lower, yielding

$$\widehat{Q}_{2n}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \lambda) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_{2n}^{\text{sa}}} \lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{cpeak}} \mathbf{a}_{\text{lcross}(i, \sigma) + \text{lnest}(i, \sigma)} \prod_{i \in \text{cval}} \mathbf{b}_{\text{ucross}(i, \sigma), \text{unest}(i, \sigma)} \cdot \quad (4.33)$$

We then multiply by λ^{-n} and take $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$: this restricts the sum to fixed-point-free involutions. We have $\text{cr}(j, \pi) = \text{ucross}(j, \sigma)$ and $\text{ne}(j, \pi) = \text{unest}(j, \sigma)$ since in both cases the distinguished index is in second position [compare (3.23a,b) to (2.74a,b)]. And we have $\text{qne}(k, \pi) = \text{lcross}(k, \sigma) + \text{lnest}(k, \sigma)$ since in both cases the distinguished index is in third position [compare (3.25) to (2.74c,d)]. So (4.33) corresponds to (4.30) with the interchange of letters $\mathbf{a} \leftrightarrow \mathbf{b}$. Then from (2.139) we have

$$\lim_{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} \lambda^{-1} \alpha_n = \mathbf{a}_{n-1} \mathbf{b}_{n-1}^*, \quad (4.34)$$

which corresponds to (4.32) with $\mathbf{a} \leftrightarrow \mathbf{b}$. \square

Remark. It is unfortunate that Theorem 4.5 treats openers and closers asymmetrically. But we do not know how to avoid this. If we consider perfect matchings as a special case of set partitions, this asymmetry is imposed by (3.28) and Theorem 3.9, as remarked already in Section 3.7. If we consider perfect matchings as a limiting case of cycle-alternating permutations, we are obliged to use the *second* master S-fraction — that is, Theorem 2.23 instead of Theorem 2.20 — in order to get access to the statistic $\text{cyc}(\sigma)$; and Theorem 2.23 treats cycle valleys differently from cycle peaks. \blacksquare

4.4 Counting connected components; indecomposable perfect matchings

We can extend our polynomials to count also the connected components of a perfect matching. Since the method is essentially identical to the one used previously for permutations (Section 2.13) and set partitions (Section 3.13), we will be brief.

We can consider a perfect matching either as a permutation in which all cycles are of length 2, or as a set partition in which all blocks are of size 2. We then specialize the definitions of “divider”, “connected component” and “indecomposable” from either

permutations (Section 2.13) or set partitions (Section 3.13); both methods give the same notions for perfect matchings. We denote the number of connected components in a perfect matching by $cc(\sigma) = cc(\pi)$. The enumeration of indecomposable perfect matchings can be found in [78, A000698]. The enumeration of perfect matchings by number of connected components is (to our surprise) not in [78] at present; it begins as

$n \setminus k$	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	Row sums
0	1									1
1	0	1								1
2	0	2	1							3
3	0	10	4	1						15
4	0	74	24	6	1					105
5	0	706	188	42	8	1				945
6	0	8162	1808	350	64	10	1			10395
7	0	110410	20628	3426	568	90	12	1		135135
8	0	1708394	273064	38886	5696	850	120	14	1	2027025

In any of the set-partition polynomials studied thus far, we can insert an additional factor $\zeta^{cc(\sigma)}$. We then have:

Theorem 4.6 (Counting connected components in perfect matchings). *Consider any of the polynomials (4.4), (4.21) or (4.30), and insert an additional factor $\zeta^{cc(\sigma)} = \zeta^{cc(\pi)}$. Then the S -fractions associated to the ordinary generating functions are modified by multiplying α_1 by ζ .*

The reasoning is identical to that in Sections 2.13 and 3.13.

5 Preliminaries for the proofs

Our proofs are based on Flajolet’s [48] combinatorial interpretation of continued fractions in terms of Dyck and Motzkin paths, together with some bijections mapping combinatorial objects (permutations, set partitions or perfect matchings) to labeled Dyck or Motzkin paths. We begin by reviewing briefly these two ingredients.

5.1 Combinatorial interpretation of continued fractions

Recall that a *Motzkin path* of length $n \geq 0$ is a path $\omega = (\omega_0, \dots, \omega_n)$ in the right quadrant $\mathbb{N} \times \mathbb{N}$, starting at $\omega_0 = (0, 0)$ and ending at $\omega_n = (n, 0)$, whose steps $s_j = \omega_j - \omega_{j-1}$ are $(1, 1)$ [“rise”], $(1, -1)$ [“fall”] or $(1, 0)$ [“level”]. We write \mathcal{M}_n for the set of Motzkin paths of length n , and $\mathcal{M} = \bigcup_{n=0}^{\infty} \mathcal{M}_n$. A Motzkin path is called a *Dyck path* if it has no level steps. A Dyck path always has even length; we write \mathcal{D}_{2n} for the set of Dyck paths of length $2n$, and $\mathcal{D} = \bigcup_{n=0}^{\infty} \mathcal{D}_{2n}$.

Let $\mathbf{a} = (a_k)_{k \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{b} = (b_k)_{k \geq 1}$ and $\mathbf{c} = (c_k)_{k \geq 0}$ be indeterminates; we will work in the ring $\mathbb{Z}[[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}]]$ of formal power series in these indeterminates. To each Motzkin path ω we assign a weight $W(\omega) \in \mathbb{Z}[[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}]]$ that is the product of the weights for the individual steps, where a rise starting at height k gets weight a_k , a fall starting

at height k gets weight b_k , and a level step at height k gets weight c_k . Flajolet [48] showed that the generating function of Motzkin paths can be expressed as a continued fraction:

Theorem 5.1 (Flajolet's master theorem). *We have*

$$\sum_{\omega \in \mathcal{M}} W(\omega) = \frac{1}{1 - c_0 - \frac{a_0 b_1}{1 - c_1 - \frac{a_1 b_2}{1 - c_2 - \frac{a_2 b_3}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (5.1)$$

as an identity in $\mathbb{Z}[[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}]]$. Equivalently, we have

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} t^n \sum_{\omega \in \mathcal{M}_n} W(\omega) = \frac{1}{1 - c_0 t - \frac{a_0 b_1 t^2}{1 - c_1 t - \frac{a_1 b_2 t^2}{1 - \dots}}} \quad (5.2)$$

as an identity in $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}][[t]]$, i.e. a J -fraction (1.2) with coefficients $\gamma_n = c_n$ and $\beta_n = a_{n-1} b_n$.

Specializing (5.2) to $\mathbf{c} = \mathbf{0}$ and replacing t^2 by t , we obtain:

Corollary 5.2 (Flajolet's master theorem for Dyck paths). *We have*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} t^n \sum_{\omega \in \mathcal{D}_{2n}} W(\omega) = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{a_0 b_1 t}{1 - \frac{a_1 b_2 t}{1 - \dots}}} \quad (5.3)$$

as an identity in $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}][[t]]$, i.e. an S -fraction (1.1) with coefficients $\alpha_n = a_{n-1} b_n$.

5.2 Labeled Dyck and Motzkin paths

Let $\mathbf{A} = (A_k)_{k \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{B} = (B_k)_{k \geq 1}$ and $\mathbf{C} = (C_k)_{k \geq 0}$ be sequences of nonnegative integers. An $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C})$ -labeled Motzkin path of length n is a pair (ω, ξ) where $\omega = (\omega_0, \dots, \omega_n)$ is a Motzkin path of length n , and $\xi = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_n)$ is a sequence of integers satisfying

$$1 \leq \xi_i \leq \begin{cases} A(h_{i-1}) & \text{if } h_i = h_{i-1} + 1 \text{ (i.e. step } i \text{ is a rise)} \\ B(h_{i-1}) & \text{if } h_i = h_{i-1} - 1 \text{ (i.e. step } i \text{ is a fall)} \\ C(h_{i-1}) & \text{if } h_i = h_{i-1} \text{ (i.e. step } i \text{ is a level step)} \end{cases} \quad (5.4)$$

where h_i is the height of the Motzkin path after step i , i.e. $\omega_i = (i, h_i)$. [For typographical clarity we have here written $A(k)$ as a synonym for A_k , etc.] We call the pair (ω, ξ) an (\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}) -labeled Dyck path if ω is a Dyck path (in this case \mathbf{C} plays

no role). We denote by $\mathcal{M}_n(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C})$ the set of $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C})$ -labeled Motzkin paths of length n , and by $\mathcal{D}_{2n}(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B})$ the set of (\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}) -labeled Dyck paths of length $2n$.

Let us stress that the numbers A_k , B_k and C_k are allowed to take the value 0. Whenever this happens, the path ω is forbidden to take a step of the specified kind at the specified height.

We shall also make use of multicolored Motzkin paths. An ℓ -colored Motzkin path is simply a Motzkin path in which each level step has been given a ‘‘color’’ from the set $\{1, 2, \dots, \ell\}$. In other words, we distinguish ℓ different types of level steps. An $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C}^{(1)}, \dots, \mathbf{C}^{(\ell)})$ -labeled ℓ -colored Motzkin path of length n is then defined in the obvious way, where we use the sequence $\mathbf{C}^{(j)}$ to bound the label ξ_i when step i is a level step of type j . We denote by $\mathcal{M}_n(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C}^{(1)}, \dots, \mathbf{C}^{(\ell)})$ the set of $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C}^{(1)}, \dots, \mathbf{C}^{(\ell)})$ -labeled ℓ -colored Motzkin paths of length n .

Remark. What we have called an $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C})$ -labeled Motzkin path is (up to small changes in notation) called a *path diagramme* by Flajolet [48, p. 136] and a *history* by Viennot [105, p. II-9]. The triplet $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C})$ is called a *possibility function*. ■

Following Flajolet [48, Proposition 7A], we can state a ‘‘master J-fraction’’ for $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C})$ -labeled Motzkin paths. Let $\mathbf{a} = (a_{k,\xi})_{k \geq 0, 1 \leq \xi \leq A(k)}$, $\mathbf{b} = (b_{k,\xi})_{k \geq 1, 1 \leq \xi \leq B(k)}$ and $\mathbf{c} = (c_{k,\xi})_{k \geq 0, 1 \leq \xi \leq C(k)}$ be indeterminates; we give an $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C})$ -labeled Motzkin path (ω, ξ) a weight $W(\omega, \xi)$ that is the product of the weights for the individual steps, where a rise starting at height k with label ξ gets weight $a_{k,\xi}$, a fall starting at height k with label ξ gets weight $b_{k,\xi}$, and a level step at height k with label ξ gets weight $c_{k,\xi}$. Then:

Theorem 5.3 (Flajolet’s master theorem for labeled Motzkin paths). *We have*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} t^n \sum_{(\omega, \xi) \in \mathcal{M}_n(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C})} W(\omega) = \frac{1}{1 - c_0 t - \frac{a_0 b_1 t^2}{1 - c_1 t - \frac{a_1 b_2 t^2}{1 - c_2 t - \frac{a_2 b_3 t^2}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (5.5)$$

as an identity in $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}][[t]]$, where

$$a_k = \sum_{\xi=1}^{A(k)} a_{k,\xi}, \quad b_k = \sum_{\xi=1}^{B(k)} b_{k,\xi}, \quad c_k = \sum_{\xi=1}^{C(k)} c_{k,\xi}. \quad (5.6)$$

This is an immediate consequence of Theorem 5.1 together with the definitions. There is obviously also a similar theorem for $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C}^{(1)}, \dots, \mathbf{C}^{(\ell)})$ -labeled ℓ -colored Motzkin paths, in which c_k involves a sum over the colors of the level steps.

By specializing to $\mathbf{c} = \mathbf{0}$ and replacing t^2 by t , we obtain the corresponding theorem for (\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}) -labeled Dyck paths:

Corollary 5.4 (Flajolet’s master theorem for labeled Dyck paths). *We have*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} t^n \sum_{(\omega, \xi) \in \mathcal{D}_{2n}(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B})} W(\omega) = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{a_0 b_1 t}{1 - \frac{a_1 b_2 t}{1 - \frac{a_2 b_3 t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (5.7)$$

as an identity in $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}][[t]]$, where a_k and b_k are defined by (5.6).

We will also use (following Biane [10]) doubly labeled Motzkin paths. Let $\mathbf{A}' = (A'_k)_{k \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{A}'' = (A''_k)_{k \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{B}' = (B'_k)_{k \geq 1}$, $\mathbf{B}'' = (B''_k)_{k \geq 1}$, $\mathbf{C}' = (C'_k)_{k \geq 0}$, $\mathbf{C}'' = (C''_k)_{k \geq 0}$ be sequences of nonnegative integers. An $(\mathbf{A}', \mathbf{A}'', \mathbf{B}', \mathbf{B}'', \mathbf{C}', \mathbf{C}'')$ -doubly labeled Motzkin path of length n is a pair (ω, ξ) where $\omega = (\omega_0, \dots, \omega_n)$ is a Motzkin path of length n , and $\xi = ((\xi'_1, \xi''_1), \dots, (\xi'_n, \xi''_n))$ is a sequence of pairs of integers satisfying

$$1 \leq \xi'_i \leq \begin{cases} A'(h_{i-1}) & \text{if } h_i = h_{i-1} + 1 \text{ (i.e. step } i \text{ is a rise)} \\ B'(h_{i-1}) & \text{if } h_i = h_{i-1} - 1 \text{ (i.e. step } i \text{ is a fall)} \\ C'(h_{i-1}) & \text{if } h_i = h_{i-1} \text{ (i.e. step } i \text{ is a level step)} \end{cases} \quad (5.8)$$

and likewise for ξ''_i . Of course, doubly labeled paths can be mapped bijectively onto singly labeled paths with $A_k = A'_k A''_k$ etc.; but this bijection is in most cases unnatural, so we prefer to work with doubly labeled paths whenever they express a combinatorially natural construction. We also define ℓ -colored doubly labeled Motzkin paths in the obvious way. Theorem 5.3 has an obvious extension to doubly labeled Motzkin paths (and to ℓ -colored doubly labeled Motzkin paths), which we refrain from writing out.

6 Permutations: Proofs

6.1 First master J-fraction:

Proof of Theorems 2.1(a), 2.2, 2.5, 2.7 and 2.9

In this section we will prove the first master J-fraction for permutations (Theorem 2.9). As a corollary we will also obtain Theorem 2.7, which is obtained from Theorem 2.9 by the specialization (2.81); and from this we will in turn obtain Theorems 2.2 and 2.5, which are special cases of Theorem 2.7, as well as Theorem 2.1(a), which is linked by contraction (1.3) to the specialization (2.26) of Theorem 2.2.

To prove Theorem 2.9, we will employ a variant of the Foata–Zeilberger [53] bijection. More precisely, we will construct a bijection from \mathfrak{S}_n to the set of $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C}^{(1)})$,

$\mathbf{C}^{(2)}, \mathbf{C}^{(3)}$ -labeled 3-colored Motzkin paths of length n , where

$$A_k = k + 1 \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (6.1a)$$

$$B_k = k \quad \text{for } k \geq 1 \quad (6.1b)$$

$$C_k^{(1)} = k \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (6.1c)$$

$$C_k^{(2)} = k \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (6.1d)$$

$$C_k^{(3)} = 1 \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (6.1e)$$

We will begin by explaining how the Motzkin path ω is defined; then we will explain how the labels ξ are defined; next we will prove that the mapping is indeed a bijection; next we will translate the various statistics from \mathfrak{S}_n to our labeled Motzkin paths; and finally we will sum over labels ξ to obtain the weight $W(\omega)$ associated to a Motzkin path ω , which upon applying (5.2) will yield Theorem 2.9.

Step 1: Definition of the Motzkin path. Given a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$, we classify the indices $i \in [n]$ in the usual way as cycle peak, cycle valley, cycle double rise, cycle double fall or fixed point. We then define a path $\omega = (\omega_0, \dots, \omega_n)$ starting at $\omega_0 = (0, 0)$ and ending at $\omega_n = (n, 0)$, with steps s_1, \dots, s_n , as follows:

- If i is a cycle valley, then s_i is a rise.
- If i is a cycle peak, then s_i is a fall.
- If i is a cycle double fall, then s_i is a level step of type 1.
- If i is a cycle double rise, then s_i is a level step of type 2.
- If i is a fixed point, then s_i is a level step of type 3.

Of course we need to prove that this is indeed a Motzkin path, i.e. that all the heights h_i are nonnegative and that $h_n = 0$. We do this by obtaining a precise interpretation of the height h_i :

Lemma 6.1. *For $i \in [n + 1]$ we have*

$$h_{i-1} = \#\{j < i : \sigma(j) \geq i\} \quad (6.2a)$$

$$= \#\{j < i : \sigma^{-1}(j) \geq i\} \quad (6.2b)$$

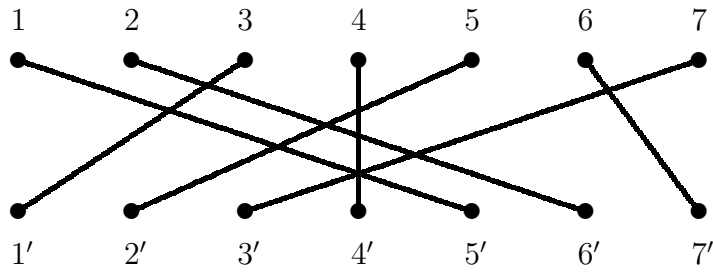
In particular, if i is a fixed point, then by comparing (6.2a) with (2.20) we see that the height of the Motzkin path after (or before) step i equals the level of the fixed point:

$$h_{i-1} = h_i = \text{lev}(i, \sigma). \quad (6.3)$$

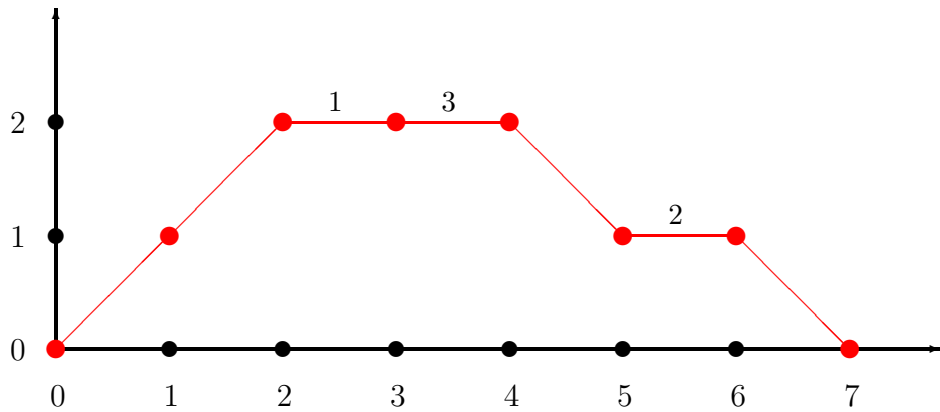
PROOF OF LEMMA 6.1. We shall prove (6.2) in the equivalent form

$$h_i = \#\{j \leq i : \sigma(j) > i\} \quad (6.4a)$$

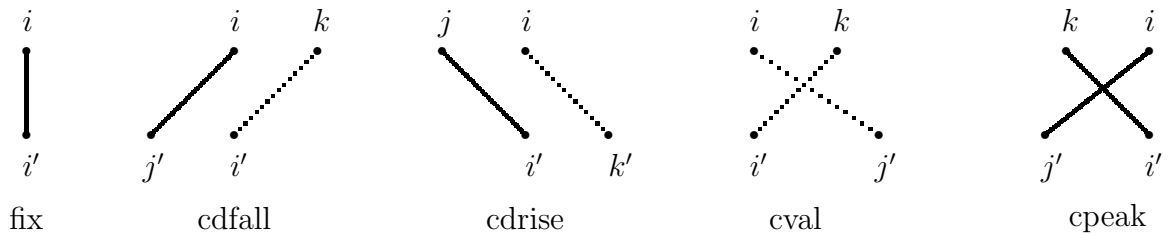
$$= \#\{j \leq i : \sigma^{-1}(j) > i\} \quad (6.4b)$$



(a)



(b)



(c)

Figure 9: (a) Bipartite digraph representing the permutation $\sigma = 5614273 = (152673)(4) \in \mathfrak{S}_7$. Arrows run from the top row to the bottom row and are suppressed for clarity. (b) Motzkin path corresponding to the same permutation σ , with the types (1,2,3) of the level steps indicated. (c) The five possibilities for a column ii' . The dotted edges are those which are not yet “seen” at step i .

for $0 \leq i \leq n$ (which implies in particular that $h_0 = h_n = 0$). To prove (6.4), we represent a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ by a bipartite digraph in which the top row of vertices is labeled $1, \dots, n$ and the bottom row $1', \dots, n'$, and we draw an arrow from i to j' in case $\sigma(i) = j$ (see Figure 9a). We then “read” this diagram from left to right, adding one column at each step and taking account of all arrows that have been “completely seen” at the given stage: namely, after i steps we include all arrows $a \rightarrow b'$ for which both a and b are $\leq i$. We now claim that the height of the Motzkin path (Figure 9b) after i steps equals the number of unconnected dots in the top row after i steps, and also equals the number of unconnected dots in the bottom row after i steps; these claims are, respectively, (6.4a) and (6.4b). We prove these claims by induction on i , by considering the five possibilities for what can happen when we include the new column ii' (see Figure 9c):

- If i is a fixed point, we have added an arrow $i \rightarrow i'$, and have thus added one connected dot to each row; the number of unconnected dots in each row remains unchanged from the previous step. This agrees with $h_i = h_{i-1}$, since s_i is a level step.
- If i is a cycle double fall, we have added an arrow $i \rightarrow j'$ with $j < i$. This means that we have added the connected dot i to the top row; in the bottom row we have added the unconnected dot i' but have also changed j' from unconnected to connected. Therefore the number of unconnected dots in each row remains unchanged from the previous step; and this agrees with $h_i = h_{i-1}$, since s_i is a level step.
- If i is a cycle double rise, we have added an arrow $j \rightarrow i'$ with $j < i$. This means that we have added the connected dot i' to the bottom row; in the top row we have added the unconnected dot i but have also changed j from unconnected to connected. Once again $h_i = h_{i-1}$, with s_i being a level step.
- If i is a cycle valley, then no new arrows are added; we have therefore added the unconnected dot i to the top row and the unconnected dot i' to the bottom row. This agrees with $h_i = h_{i-1} + 1$, since s_i is a rise.
- If i is a cycle peak, then two new arrows are added: $i \rightarrow j'$ with $j = \sigma(i) < i$, and $k \rightarrow i'$ with $k = \sigma^{-1}(i) < i$. Therefore, in each row we have added one connected dot (i or i') and also changed one dot from unconnected to connected; therefore, the number of unconnected dots in each row decreases by 1. This agrees with $h_i = h_{i-1} - 1$, since s_i is a fall.

□

Remark. It follows from the definition of the mapping $\sigma \mapsto \omega$ that the permutations σ and σ^{-1} map onto the same Motzkin path, except that the level steps of types 1 and 2 are interchanged. This explains why (6.2a) equals (6.2b). ■

Step 2: Definition of the labels ξ_i . We now define

$$\xi_i = \begin{cases} 1 + \#\{j: j < i \text{ and } \sigma(j) > \sigma(i)\} & \text{if } \sigma(i) > i \text{ (cval, cdrise)} \\ 1 + \#\{j: j > i \text{ and } \sigma(j) < \sigma(i)\} & \text{if } \sigma(i) < i \text{ (cpeak, cdfall)} \\ 1 & \text{if } \sigma(i) = i \text{ (fix)} \end{cases} \quad (6.5)$$

These definitions have a simple interpretation in terms of the nesting statistics defined in (2.74b,d):

$$\xi_i - 1 = \begin{cases} \text{unest}(i, \sigma) & \text{if } \sigma(i) > i \text{ (cval, cdrise)} \\ \text{lnest}(i, \sigma) & \text{if } \sigma(i) < i \text{ (cpeak, cdfall)} \\ 0 & \text{if } \sigma(i) = i \text{ (fix)} \end{cases} \quad (6.6)$$

Of course, we must verify that the inequalities (5.4)/(6.1) are satisfied; to do this, we interpret $h_{i-1} - \xi_i$ in terms of the crossing statistics defined in (2.74a,c):

Lemma 6.2 (Crossing statistics). *We have*

$$h_{i-1} + 1 - \xi_i = \text{ucross}(i, \sigma) \quad \text{if } i \in \text{cval} \quad (6.7)$$

$$h_{i-1} - \xi_i = \text{ucross}(i, \sigma) \quad \text{if } i \in \text{cdrise} \quad (6.8)$$

$$h_{i-1} - \xi_i = \text{lcross}(i, \sigma) \quad \text{if } i \in \text{cpeak} \cup \text{cdfall} \quad (6.9)$$

PROOF. (a) If i is a cycle valley (so that $\sigma(i) > i$ and $\sigma^{-1}(i) > i$), then

$$h_{i-1} + 1 - \xi_i = \#\{j < i: \sigma(j) \geq i\} - \#\{j < i: \sigma(j) > \sigma(i)\} \quad (6.10a)$$

$$= \#\{j < i: \sigma(i) \geq \sigma(j) \geq i\} \quad (6.10b)$$

$$= \#\{j < i: \sigma(i) > \sigma(j) > i\} \quad (6.10c)$$

$$= \text{ucross}(i, \sigma) . \quad (6.10d)$$

(b) If i is a cycle double rise (so that $\sigma(i) > i$ and $\sigma^{-1}(i) < i$), then

$$h_{i-1} - \xi_i = \#\{j < i: \sigma(j) \geq i\} - 1 - \#\{j < i: \sigma(j) > \sigma(i)\} \quad (6.11a)$$

$$= \#\{j < i: \sigma(j) > i\} - \#\{j < i: \sigma(j) > \sigma(i)\} \quad (6.11b)$$

$$= \#\{j < i: \sigma(i) \geq \sigma(j) > i\} \quad (6.11c)$$

$$= \#\{j < i: \sigma(i) > \sigma(j) > i\} \quad (6.11d)$$

$$= \text{ucross}(i, \sigma) . \quad (6.11e)$$

(c) If i is a cycle peak or a cycle double fall (so that $\sigma(i) < i$), then

$$h_{i-1} - \xi_i = \#\{j: j < i \text{ and } \sigma^{-1}(j) \geq i\} - 1 - \#\{j: \sigma(j) < \sigma(i) \text{ and } j > i\} \quad (6.12a)$$

$$= \#\{j: \sigma(j) < i \text{ and } j \geq i\} - 1 - \#\{j: \sigma(j) < \sigma(i) \text{ and } j > i\} \quad (6.12b)$$

$$= \#\{j: \sigma(j) < i \text{ and } j > i\} - \#\{j: \sigma(j) < \sigma(i) \text{ and } j > i\} \quad (6.12c)$$

$$= \#\{j > i: \sigma(i) \leq \sigma(j) < i\} \quad (6.12d)$$

$$= \#\{j > i: \sigma(i) < \sigma(j) < i\} \quad (6.12e)$$

$$= \text{lcross}(i, \sigma) . \quad (6.12f)$$

□

Since the quantities (6.7)–(6.9) are manifestly nonnegative, it follows immediately that the inequalities (5.4)/(6.1) are satisfied.

For future use, let us also (partially) interpret the labels ξ_i in terms of the bipartite digraph employed in the proof of Lemma 6.1 (Figure 9). First recall that h_{i-1} equals the number of unconnected dots in the top row after $i - 1$ steps, and also equals the number of unconnected dots in the bottom row after $i - 1$ steps. Now, if i is a cycle double fall, then at stage i we add an arrow from i on the top row to an unconnected dot j' on the bottom row, where $j = \sigma(i) < i$; and if i is a cycle peak, then we add the just-mentioned arrow and also add an arrow from an unconnected dot k on the top row to i' , where $k = \sigma^{-1}(i) < i$. We now claim that, in these two cases, ξ_i is the index of the unconnected dot j' among all the unconnected dots on the bottom row: that is, $\xi_i = r$ if and only if j' is the r th unconnected dot on the bottom row, reading from left to right. Indeed, by definition $\xi_i - 1$ equals $\#\{k: k > i \text{ and } \sigma(k) < \sigma(i)\}$, which is precisely the number of unconnected dots on the bottom row to the left of $j' = \sigma(i)'$.

For cycle double rises and cycle valleys, by contrast, the labels ξ_i do not have any simple interpretation in terms of the bipartite digraph *when read from left to right*, as they depend on the value of $\sigma(i)$, which is $> i$ and hence unknown at time i . (See also the Remark after Step 2 in Section 6.2.)

Step 3: Proof of bijection. We prove that the mapping $\sigma \mapsto (\omega, \xi)$ is a bijection by explicitly describing the inverse map.

First, some preliminaries: Given a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$, we define five subsets of $[n]$:

$$F = \{i: \sigma(i) > i\} = \text{positions of excedances} \quad (6.13a)$$

$$F' = \{i: i > \sigma^{-1}(i)\} = \text{values of excedances} \quad (6.13b)$$

$$G = \{i: \sigma(i) < i\} = \text{positions of anti-excedances} \quad (6.13c)$$

$$G' = \{i: i < \sigma^{-1}(i)\} = \text{values of anti-excedances} \quad (6.13d)$$

$$H = \{i: \sigma(i) = i\} = \text{fixed points} \quad (6.13e)$$

Let us observe that

$$F \cap F' = \text{cycle double rises} \quad (6.14a)$$

$$G \cap G' = \text{cycle double falls} \quad (6.14b)$$

$$F \cap G' = \text{cycle valleys} \quad (6.14c)$$

$$F' \cap G = \text{cycle peaks} \quad (6.14d)$$

$$F \cap G = \emptyset \quad (6.14e)$$

$$F' \cap G' = \emptyset \quad (6.14f)$$

and of course H is disjoint from F, F', G, G' .

Let us also recall the notion of an *inversion table*: Let S be a totally ordered set of cardinality k , and let $\mathbf{x} = (x_1, \dots, x_k)$ be an enumeration of S ; then the (left-to-right) inversion table corresponding to \mathbf{x} is the sequence $\mathbf{p} = (p_1, \dots, p_k)$ of nonnegative integers defined by $p_\alpha = \#\{\beta < \alpha : x_\beta > x_\alpha\}$. Note that $0 \leq p_\alpha \leq \alpha - 1$ for all $\alpha \in [k]$, so there are exactly $k!$ possible inversion tables. Given the inversion table \mathbf{p} , we can reconstruct the sequence \mathbf{x} by working from right to left, as follows: There are p_k elements of S larger than x_k , so x_k must be the $(p_k + 1)$ th largest element of S . Then there are p_{k-1} elements of $S \setminus \{x_k\}$ larger than x_{k-1} , so x_{k-1} must be the $(p_{k-1} + 1)$ th largest element of $S \setminus \{x_k\}$. And so forth. [Analogously, the right-to-left inversion table corresponding to \mathbf{x} is the sequence $\mathbf{p} = (p_1, \dots, p_k)$ of nonnegative integers defined by $p_\alpha = \#\{\beta > \alpha : x_\beta < x_\alpha\}$.]

With these preliminaries out of the way, we can now describe the map $(\omega, \xi) \mapsto \sigma$. Given the 3-colored Motzkin path ω , we read off which indices i correspond to cycle valleys, cycle peaks, cycle double falls, cycle double rises, and fixed points; this allows us to reconstruct the sets F, F', G, G', H . We now use the labels ξ to reconstruct the maps $\sigma \upharpoonright F: F \rightarrow F'$ and $\sigma \upharpoonright G: G \rightarrow G'$, as follows: Let i_1, \dots, i_k be the elements of F written in increasing order; then the sequence j_1, \dots, j_k defined by $j_\alpha = \sigma(i_\alpha)$ is a listing of F' whose inversion table is given by $p_\alpha = \xi_{i_\alpha} - 1$: this is the content of (6.5) in the case $\sigma(i) > i$. So we can use $\xi \upharpoonright F$ to reconstruct $\sigma \upharpoonright F$. In a similar way we can use $\xi \upharpoonright G$ to reconstruct $\sigma \upharpoonright G$, but now we must use the right-to-left inversion table because of how (6.5) is written in the case $\sigma(i) < i$.

Step 4: Translation of the statistics. We have already translated the crossing and nesting statistics (2.74) in terms of the heights h_{i-1} and labels ξ_i : see (6.6) and Lemma 6.2. And we have also translated the level of a fixed point in terms of the height $h_{i-1} = h_i$: see (6.3). These are all the statistics arising in Theorem 2.9.

Step 5: Computation of the weights (2.79). Using the bijection, we transfer the weights (2.77) from σ to (ω, ξ) and then sum over ξ to obtain the weight $W(\omega)$. This weight is factorized over the individual steps s_i , as follows:

- If s_i is a rise starting at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is a cycle valley), then from (6.7) and (6.6) the weight is

$$a_k = \sum_{\xi_i=1}^{k+1} \mathbf{a}_{k+1-\xi_i, \xi_i-1} = \mathbf{a}_k^* \quad (6.15)$$

where \mathbf{a}_k^* was defined in (2.80).

- If s_i is a fall starting at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is a cycle peak and $k \geq 1$), then from (6.9) and (6.6) the weight is

$$b_k = \sum_{\xi_i=1}^k \mathbf{b}_{k-\xi_i, \xi_i-1} = \mathbf{b}_{k-1}^* . \quad (6.16)$$

- If s_i is a level step of type 1 at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is a cycle double fall and $k \geq 1$), then from (6.9) and (6.6) the weight is

$$c_k^{(1)} = \sum_{\xi_i=1}^k \mathbf{c}_{k-\xi_i, \xi_i-1} = \mathbf{c}_{k-1}^* . \quad (6.17)$$

- If s_i is a level step of type 2 at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is a cycle double rise and $k \geq 1$), then from (6.8) and (6.6) the weight is

$$c_k^{(2)} = \sum_{\xi_i=1}^k \mathbf{d}_{k-\xi_i, \xi_i-1} = \mathbf{d}_{k-1}^* . \quad (6.18)$$

- If s_i is a level step of type 3 at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is a fixed point), then from (6.3) the weight is

$$c_k^{(3)} = \mathbf{e}_k . \quad (6.19)$$

Setting $\gamma_k = c_k^{(1)} + c_k^{(2)} + c_k^{(3)}$ and $\beta_k = a_{k-1}b_k$ as instructed in (5.2), we obtain the weights (2.79). This completes the proof of Theorem 2.9. \square

Remark. Theorem 2.16 on counting connected components in permutations, as applied to Theorem 2.9, has an easy proof in our labeled-Motzkin-paths formalism. From (6.4) we see that i is a divider (see Section 2.13) if and only if $h_i = 0$. And this happens if and only if step s_i is either a fall starting at height $h_{i-1} = 1$ or a level step of type 3 at height $h_{i-1} = 0$. So, giving each connected component a weight ζ amounts to multiplying \mathbf{b}_0^* and \mathbf{e}_0 by ζ . In the J-fraction coefficients (2.79) this multiplies γ_0 and β_1 by ζ , exactly as asserted in Theorem 2.16. \blacksquare

Let us conclude by giving a formula for the inversion statistic (2.140) in terms of the Foata–Zeilberger heights and labels:

Lemma 6.3 (Inversion statistic). *We have*

$$\text{inv}(\sigma) = \sum_i (h_{i-1} + \xi_i - 1) + \sum_{i \in \text{fix}} h_{i-1} . \quad (6.20)$$

PROOF. We use Proposition 2.24 to write $\text{inv}(\sigma)$ in terms of our crossing and nesting statistics, then (6.3), (6.6) and (6.7)–(6.9) to translate the crossing and nesting statistics to heights and labels. We get

$$\text{cval} + \text{ucrosscval} + 2 \text{unestcval} = \sum_{i \in \text{cval}} (h_{i-1} + \xi_i) \quad (6.21a)$$

$$\text{cdrise} + \text{ucrosscdrise} + 2 \text{unestcdrise} = \sum_{i \in \text{cdrise}} (h_{i-1} + \xi_i - 1) \quad (6.21b)$$

$$\text{cdfall} + \text{lcrosscdfall} + 2 \text{lnestcdfall} = \sum_{i \in \text{cdfall}} (h_{i-1} + \xi_i - 1) \quad (6.21c)$$

$$\text{lcrosscpeak} + 2 \text{lnestcpeak} = \sum_{i \in \text{cpeak}} (h_{i-1} + \xi_i - 2) \quad (6.21d)$$

$$2 \text{psnest} = 2 \sum_{i \in \text{fix}} h_{i-1} = 2 \sum_{i \in \text{fix}} (h_{i-1} + \xi_i - 1) \quad (6.21e)$$

and hence

$$\text{inv} = (\text{cval} - \text{cpeak}) + \sum_i (h_{i-1} + \xi_i - 1) + \sum_{i \in \text{fix}} h_{i-1}. \quad (6.22)$$

Since $\text{cval} = \text{cpeak}$, this proves (6.20). \square

A formula equivalent to (6.20) was given, in a different notation, in [24, eqn. (8)].

Final remarks. 1. Our definition of the Motzkin path ω is essentially the same as that used by Foata and Zeilberger [53], Randrianarivony [83, Section 2], Corteel [29, Section 3.1], and Shin and Zeng [91, Section 4] [92, Section 5]; the only difference is that we have used three rather than two types of level steps, for conceptual clarity. Our definition of the labels ξ is different from the ones in these papers, but similar in spirit.

2. Other variants (and other presentations) of the Foata–Zeilberger bijection can be found in [10, 24, 31, 42, 53, 82, 83, 93]. \blacksquare

6.2 Second master J-fraction:

Proof of Theorems 2.1(b), 2.4, 2.12 and 2.14

In this section we will prove the second master J-fraction for permutations (Theorem 2.14). As a corollary we will also obtain Theorem 2.12, which is obtained from Theorem 2.14 by the specialization (2.104); and from this we will in turn obtain Theorem 2.4, as well as Theorem 2.1(b), which is linked by contraction (1.3) to the specialization (2.34) of Theorem 2.4.

Here we need to construct a bijection that will allow us to count the number of cycles (cyc), which is a global variable. To do this, we will employ (a slight variant of) the Biane [10] bijection; it is very similar in spirit to the Foata–Zeilberger bijection

used in Section 6.1, but organized slightly differently. The Biane bijection (in our version) maps \mathfrak{S}_n to the set of $(\mathbf{A}', \mathbf{A}'', \mathbf{B}', \mathbf{B}'', \mathbf{C}^{(1)'}, \mathbf{C}^{(1)''}, \mathbf{C}^{(2)'}, \mathbf{C}^{(2)''}, \mathbf{C}^{(3)'}, \mathbf{C}^{(3)'})$ -doubly labeled 3-colored Motzkin paths of length n , where

$$(A'_k, A''_k) = (1, 1) \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (6.23a)$$

$$(B'_k, B''_k) = (k, k) \quad \text{for } k \geq 1 \quad (6.23b)$$

$$(C_k^{(1)'}, C_k^{(1)'}) = (1, k) \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (6.23c)$$

$$(C_k^{(2)'}, C_k^{(2)'}) = (k, 1) \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (6.23d)$$

$$(C_k^{(3)'}, C_k^{(3)'}) = (1, 1) \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (6.23e)$$

Our presentation of this bijection will follow the same steps as in Section 6.1.

Step 1: Definition of the Motzkin path. The Motzkin path ω associated to a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ is identical to the one employed in the Foata–Zeilberger bijection. That is:

- If i is a cycle valley, then s_i is a rise.
- If i is a cycle peak, then s_i is a fall.
- If i is a cycle double fall, then s_i is a level step of type 1.
- If i is a cycle double rise, then s_i is a level step of type 2.
- If i is a fixed point, then s_i is a level step of type 3.

The interpretation of the heights h_i is thus exactly as in Lemma 6.1.

Step 2: Definition of the labels $\xi_i = (\xi'_i, \xi''_i)$.

- If i is a cycle valley, then $\xi'_i = \xi''_i = 1$.
- If i is a cycle double fall, then $\xi'_i = 1$ and $\xi''_i = 1 + \#\{k: k > i \text{ and } \sigma(k) < \sigma(i)\}$.
- If i is a cycle double rise, then $\xi''_i = 1$ and $\xi'_i = 1 + \#\{k: k < \sigma^{-1}(i) \text{ and } \sigma(k) > i\}$.
- If i is a cycle peak, then $\xi'_i = 1 + \#\{k: k < \sigma^{-1}(i) \text{ and } \sigma(k) > i\}$ and $\xi''_i = 1 + \#\{k: k > i \text{ and } \sigma(k) < \sigma(i)\}$.
- If i is a fixed point, then $\xi'_i = \xi''_i = 1$.

These labels have a nice interpretation in terms of the bipartite digraph employed in the proof of Lemma 6.1 (Figure 9). First recall that h_{i-1} equals the number of unconnected dots in the top row after $i - 1$ steps, and also equals the number of unconnected dots in the bottom row after $i - 1$ steps. We then look at what happens at stage i :

- If i is a cycle valley, then at stage i we add no arrows. Since no choices are being made at this stage, we set $\xi'_i = \xi''_i = 1$.

- If i is a cycle double fall, then at stage i we add an arrow from i on the top row to an unconnected dot j' on the bottom row, where $j = \sigma(i) < i$; then ξ_i'' is the index of the unconnected dot j' among all the unconnected dots on the bottom row. Since no unconnected dot on the top row was touched, we set $\xi_i' = 1$.
- Similarly, if i is a cycle double rise, then at stage i we add an arrow from an unconnected dot j on the top row to i' on the bottom row, where $j = \sigma^{-1}(i) < i$; then ξ_i' is the index of the unconnected dot j among all the unconnected dots on the top row. Since no unconnected dot on the bottom row was touched, we set $\xi_i'' = 1$.
- If i is a cycle peak, then we add two arrows: from i on the top row to the unconnected dot j' on the bottom row, where $j = \sigma(i) < i$; and also from the unconnected dot k on the top row to i' on the bottom row, where $k = \sigma^{-1}(i) < i$. Then ξ_i' (resp. ξ_i'') is the index of k (resp. j') among the unconnected dots on the top (resp. bottom) row.
- If i is a fixed point, then at stage i we add an arrow $i \rightarrow i'$. Since no choices are being made at this stage, we set $\xi_i' = \xi_i'' = 1$.

This interpretation shows in particular that the inequalities (5.4)/(6.23) are satisfied.

Remark. The Biane labels (ξ_i', ξ_i'') are related to the Foata–Zeilberger labels ξ_i [defined in (6.5)] as follows:

$$i \in \text{cdfall} \cup \text{cpeak}: \xi_i''(\text{Biane}) = \xi_i(\text{FZ}) \quad (6.24a)$$

$$i \in \text{cdrise} \cup \text{cpeak}: \xi_i'(\text{Biane}) = \xi_{\sigma^{-1}(i)}(\text{FZ}) \text{ or equivalently } \xi_i(\text{FZ}) = \xi_{\sigma(i)}'(\text{Biane}) \quad (6.24b)$$

since if i is a cycle double fall or cycle peak, then $\sigma(i) < i$, while if i is a cycle double rise or cycle peak, then $\sigma^{-1}(i) < i$. ■

Step 3: Proof of bijection. The foregoing interpretation shows how to build the bipartite digraph, and hence reconstruct the permutation σ , by successively reading the steps s_i and labels ξ_i . Specifically, at stage i one proceeds as follows [10, p. 280]:

- If s_i is a rise (corresponding to i being a cycle valley), then we add no arrows. [In this case we necessarily have $\xi_i = (1, 1)$.]
- If s_i is a level step of type 1 (corresponding to i being a cycle double fall), then $\xi_i = (1, m)$ for some $m \in [h_{i-1}]$, and we add an arrow from i on the top row to the m th (from left to right) unconnected dot on the bottom row.
- If s_i is a level step of type 2 (corresponding to i being a cycle double rise), then $\xi_i = (l, 1)$ for some $l \in [h_{i-1}]$, and we add an arrow from the l th (from left to right) unconnected dot on the top row to i' on the bottom row.
- If s_i is a fall (corresponding to i being a cycle peak), then $\xi_i = (l, m)$ for some $l, m \in [h_{i-1}]$, and we add two arrows: one going from i on the top row to the

m th (from left to right) unconnected dot on the bottom row; and the other going from the l th (from left to right) unconnected dot on the top row to i' on the bottom row.

- If s_i is a level step of type 3 (corresponding to i being a fixed point), we add an arrow from i on the top row to i' on the bottom row. [In this case we necessarily have $\xi_i = (1, 1)$.]

Clearly, once a dot becomes the source or sink of an arrow, it plays no further role in the construction and in particular receives no further arrows. Moreover, since $h_n = 0$, at the end of the construction there are no unconnected dots. The final result of the construction thus corresponds to a bijection between $\{1, \dots, n\}$ and $\{1', \dots, n'\}$, or in other words to a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$.

Step 4: Translation of the statistics.

Lemma 6.4 (Crossing and nesting statistics). *We have*

$$h_{i-1} - \xi_i'' = \text{lcross}(i, \sigma) \quad \text{if } i \in \text{cpeak} \cup \text{cdfall} \quad (6.25)$$

$$\xi_i'' - 1 = \text{lnest}(i, \sigma) \quad \text{if } i \in \text{cpeak} \cup \text{cdfall} \quad (6.26)$$

$$h_i - 1 = \text{ucross}(i, \sigma) + \text{unest}(i, \sigma) \quad \text{if } i \in \text{cval} \cup \text{cdrise} \quad (6.27)$$

$$\xi_i' - 1 = \text{unest}(\sigma^{-1}(i), \sigma) \quad \text{if } i \in \text{cpeak} \cup \text{cdrise} \quad (6.28)$$

$$h_{i-1} = h_i = \text{lev}(i, \sigma) \quad \text{if } i \in \text{fix} \quad (6.29)$$

Note that (6.27) is written in terms of h_i , while (6.25) is written in terms of h_{i-1} .

PROOF. (a) If i is a cycle peak or a cycle double fall, then $h_{i-1} - \xi_i'' = \text{lcross}(i, \sigma)$ exactly as in (6.12), and $\xi_i'' - 1 = \text{lnest}(i, \sigma)$ exactly as in (6.6).

(b) If i is a cycle valley or a cycle double rise, then $h_i - 1 = \text{ucross}(i, \sigma) + \text{unest}(i, \sigma)$ is an immediate consequence of (6.4a) and the definitions (2.74a,b).

(c) If i is a cycle peak or a cycle double rise, then $\xi_i' - 1 = \text{unest}(\sigma^{-1}(i), \sigma)$ is an immediate consequence of the definition of ξ_i' and the definition (2.74b).

(d) If i is a fixed point, then $h_{i-1} = h_i = \text{lev}(i, \sigma)$ was proven in (6.3). \square

It is instructive to compare this result with Lemma 6.2. For cycle peaks and cycle double falls, the results here for lcross and lnest are identical to (6.9) and (6.6) but with ξ_i replaced by ξ_i'' ; this is, of course, an immediate consequence of (6.24a). For cycle valleys and cycle double rises, by contrast, here we do not learn about ucross and unest individually, but only about their sum. And finally, for cycle peaks and cycle double rises, we obtain unest , but evaluated at $\sigma^{-1}(i)$ rather than at i ; this is an immediate consequence of (6.24b).

Finally, we come to the counting of cycles (*cyc*). We use the term *cycle closer* to denote the largest element in a non-singleton cycle. Obviously every non-singleton cycle has precisely one cycle closer. A cycle closer is always a cycle peak, but not conversely: for instance, in the cycle (1324), both 3 and 4 are cycle peaks, but only 4 is a cycle closer. So we need to know which cycle peaks are cycle closers, or at least how many of the former are the latter. The answer is as follows:

Lemma 6.5 (Counting of cycles). *Fix $i \in [n]$, and fix (s_1, \dots, s_{i-1}) and $(\xi_1, \dots, \xi_{i-1})$. Consider all permutations $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ that have those given values for the first $i-1$ steps and labels and for which i is a cycle peak. Then:*

- (a) *The value of $\xi_i = (\xi'_i, \xi''_i)$ completely determines whether i is a cycle closer or not.*
- (b) *For each value $\xi'_i \in [h_{i-1}]$ there is precisely one value $\xi''_i \in [h_{i-1}]$ that makes i a cycle closer, and conversely.*

PROOF. We use once again the bipartite digraph of Figure 9(a), and let us also draw a vertical dotted line (with an upwards arrow) to connect each pair $j' \rightarrow j$. Now consider the restriction of this digraph to the vertex set $\{1, \dots, i-1, 1', \dots, (i-1)'\}$: as discussed in Step 3, this restriction can be reconstructed from the steps (s_1, \dots, s_{i-1}) and the labels $(\xi_1, \dots, \xi_{i-1})$. The connected components of this restriction are of two types: complete directed cycles and directed open chains; they correspond to cycles of σ whose cycle closers are, respectively, $\leq i-1$ and $> i-1$. Each directed open chain runs from an unconnected dot on the bottom row to an unconnected dot on the top row.

Now suppose that i is a cycle peak. Then at stage i we add two arrows: from i on the top row to an unconnected dot j' on the bottom row; and also from an unconnected dot k on the top row to i' on the bottom row. Here ξ'_i (resp. ξ''_i) is the index of k (resp. j') among the unconnected dots on the top (resp. bottom) row.

Now the point is simply this: i is a cycle closer if and only if j' and k belong to the *same* directed open chain (with j' being its starting point and k being its ending point). So for each value $\xi'_i \in [h_{i-1}]$ there is precisely one value $\xi''_i \in [h_{i-1}]$ that makes i a cycle closer, and conversely. \square

Step 5: Computation of the weights (2.102). Using the bijection, we transfer the weights (2.100) from σ to (ω, ξ) and then sum over ξ to obtain the weight $W(\omega)$. This weight is factorized over the individual steps s_i , as follows:

- If s_i is a rise starting at height $h_{i-1} = h_i - 1 = k$ (so that i is a cycle valley), then necessarily $\xi_i = (1, 1)$, and it follows from (6.27) that the weight is

$$a_k = \mathbf{a}_k. \quad (6.30)$$

- If s_i is a fall starting at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is a cycle peak and $k \geq 1$), then for each choice of $\xi''_i \in [k]$ there are k possible choices of ξ'_i , of which one closes a cycle and the rest don't (Lemma 6.5). Therefore, using (6.25) and (6.26), the weight is

$$b_k = (\lambda + k - 1) \sum_{\xi''_i=1}^k \mathbf{b}_{k-\xi''_i, \xi''_i-1} = (\lambda + k - 1) \mathbf{b}_{k-1}^*. \quad (6.31)$$

- If s_i is a level step of type 1 at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is a cycle double fall and $k \geq 1$), then from (6.25) and (6.26) the weight is

$$c_k^{(1)} = \sum_{\xi'_i=1}^k c_{k-\xi'_i, \xi''_i-1} = c_{k-1}^* . \quad (6.32)$$

- If s_i is a level step of type 2 at height $h_{i-1} = h_i = k$ (so that i is a cycle double rise and $k \geq 1$), then from (6.27) and (6.28) the weight is

$$c_k^{(2)} = \sum_{\xi'_i=1}^k d_{k-1, \xi'_i-1} = d_{k-1}^\natural . \quad (6.33)$$

- If s_i is a level step of type 3 at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is a fixed point), then from (6.29) the weight is

$$c_k^{(3)} = \lambda e_k . \quad (6.34)$$

Setting $\gamma_k = c_k^{(1)} + c_k^{(2)} + c_k^{(3)}$ and $\beta_k = a_{k-1}b_k$ as instructed in (5.2), we obtain the weights (2.102). This completes the proof of Theorem 2.14. \square

Remark. Theorem 2.16 on counting connected components in permutations, as applied to Theorem 2.14, has an easy proof in our labeled-Motzkin-paths formalism; the argument is identical to the one presented in Section 6.1 for the first master J-fraction. \blacksquare

Let us also observe that Biane [10, eqn. (3.2.6)] has given a formula, in terms of his heights and labels, for the inversion statistic (2.140); in our notation it is:

Lemma 6.6 (Inversion statistic). *We have*

$$\begin{aligned} \text{inv}(\sigma) &= 2 \sum_{i \in \text{fix}} h_{i-1} + \sum_{i \in \text{cdrise}} (h_{i-1} + \xi'_i - 1) + \sum_{i \in \text{cdfall}} (h_{i-1} + \xi''_i - 1) \\ &\quad + \sum_{i \in \text{cpeak}} (2h_{i-1} + \xi'_i + \xi''_i - 3) \end{aligned} \quad (6.35a)$$

$$= \sum_i (h_{i-1} + \xi'_i + \xi''_i - 2) + \sum_{i \in \text{fix}} h_{i-1} . \quad (6.35b)$$

Since Biane's proof of this formula is a bit complicated (by induction on n), let us give a simple proof, following ideas of Elizalde [42, p. 6, item (v)]:

PROOF. The number of inversions is the number of crossings of lines in the bipartite digraph of Figure 9(a). We now count the crossings of lines (L, L') according to the stage i at which the *first* of the two lines L, L' appears in the “reading” of the digraph from left to right, as shown in Figure 9(c):

1) A fixed point i corresponds to a vertical line $i \rightarrow i'$ in the bipartite digraph; and since at stage i there are $h_{i-1} = h_i$ unconnected dots $j < i$ in the top row and also $h_{i-1} = h_i$ unconnected dots j' with $j < i$ in the bottom row, each of these unconnected dots will later connect to a vertex k' (resp. k) with $k > i$, thereby crossing the vertical line $i \rightarrow i'$. This gives the term $2 \sum_{i \in \text{fix}} h_{i-1}$.

2) A cycle double rise i corresponds to a line $j \rightarrow i'$ where $j < i$ (and there is not yet any line emanating from i). The line $j \rightarrow i'$ will later be crossed by lines emanating from $\xi'_i - 1$ unconnected dots $< j$ on the top row, and lines arriving at h_{i-1} unconnected dots $< i'$ on the bottom row. This gives the term $\sum_{i \in \text{cdrise}} (h_{i-1} + \xi'_i - 1)$.

3) Similarly, a cycle double fall i corresponds to a line $i \rightarrow j'$ where $j < i$ (and there is not yet any line arriving at i'). The line $i \rightarrow j'$ will later be crossed by lines emanating from h_{i-1} unconnected dots $< i$ on the top row, and lines arriving at $\xi''_i - 1$ unconnected dots $< j'$ on the bottom row. This gives the term $\sum_{i \in \text{cdfall}} (h_{i-1} + \xi''_i - 1)$.

4) A cycle peak i corresponds to a pair of lines $i \rightarrow j'$ and $k \rightarrow i'$, where $j, k < i$. The line $i \rightarrow j'$ will later be crossed by lines emanating from h_{i-1} unconnected dots $< i$ on the top row, and lines arriving at $\xi''_i - 1$ unconnected dots $< j'$ on the bottom row. Similarly, the line $k \rightarrow i'$ will later be crossed by lines emanating from $\xi'_i - 1$ unconnected dots $< k$ on the top row, and lines arriving at h_{i-1} unconnected dots $< i'$ on the bottom row. However, this double-counts the crossing between the lines $i \rightarrow j'$ and $k \rightarrow i'$, so we need to subtract 1. This gives the term $\sum_{i \in \text{cpeak}} (2h_{i-1} + \xi'_i + \xi''_i - 3)$.

5) A cycle valley i does not correspond to any line at stage i .

Putting this all together gives (6.35a). This can be rewritten as (6.35b) once we observe that

$$\sum_{i \in \text{cval}} h_{i-1} = \sum_{i \in \text{cpeak}} (h_{i-1} - 1) \quad (6.36)$$

(by pairing rises with falls on the Motzkin path) and recall that the “null” values of ξ'_i or ξ''_i are 1. \square

Remarks. 1. A formula equivalent to (6.35b) was given, in a different notation, in [24, after eqn. (8)].

2. The result of Lemma 6.6 can also be used to give an alternate proof of Proposition 2.24, as follows: Start from (6.35a) and rewrite it slightly by using

$$\sum_{i \in \text{cpeak}} h_{i-1} = \sum_{i \in \text{cval}} h_i. \quad (6.37)$$

Then translate the heights and labels back to crossing and nesting statistics, using (6.25)–(6.29); this yields

$$\begin{aligned} \text{inv} &= \text{cval} + \text{cdrise} + \text{cdfall} + \text{ucross} + \text{lcross} + 2 \text{lnest} + 2 \text{psnest} + \text{unest} \\ &+ \sum_{i \in \text{cdrise} \cup \text{cpeak}} \text{unest}(\sigma^{-1}(i), \sigma). \end{aligned} \quad (6.38)$$

But $i \in \text{cdrise} \cup \text{cpeak} \iff \sigma^{-1}(i) < i \iff \sigma^{-1}(i) \in \text{cdrise} \cup \text{cval}$, so

$$\sum_{i \in \text{cdrise} \cup \text{cpeak}} \text{unest}(\sigma^{-1}(i), \sigma) = \sum_{j \in \text{cdrise} \cup \text{cval}} \text{unest}(j, \sigma) = \text{unest}(\sigma). \quad (6.39)$$

Combining this with (6.38) proves (2.141).

3. Note the close similarity between the Foata–Zeilberger formula (6.20) and the Biane formula (6.35b). Indeed, by using (6.24) and (6.39) together with (6.6), it is straightforward to show that the right-hand sides of (6.20) and (6.35b) are equal. ■

Let us explain, finally, why it is *not* possible to use the Biane bijection to combine the counting of cycles with the counting of inversions. The trouble is that the last term in (6.35a) — that is, the sum over cpeak — involves both ξ'_i and ξ''_i . By Lemma 6.5 we know that for each possible value of ξ'_i there is exactly one value of ξ''_i that makes i a cycle closer — *but we don't know which one it is*. Therefore, we are unable to evaluate the sum over $\xi'_i, \xi''_i \in [k]$ of (for instance) a weight $q^{\xi'_i + \xi''_i}$ times a weight λ for each cycle closer. For instance, suppose that the cycle closer occurs when $\xi'_i = \xi''_i$: then the sum is

$$\left(\sum_{j=1}^k q^j \right)^2 + (\lambda - 1) \sum_{j=1}^k q^{2j}. \quad (6.40)$$

But if we suppose, by contrast, that the cycle closer occurs when $\xi'_i = k + 1 - \xi''_i$, then the sum is

$$\left(\sum_{j=1}^k q^j \right)^2 + (\lambda - 1) k q^{k+1}. \quad (6.41)$$

Of course, as explained in Section 2.16, this inability to combine the counting of cycles with the counting of inversions is not merely a limitation of our method of proof, but is inherent in the problem: the weight $q^{\text{inv}(\sigma)} \lambda^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)}$ gives rise to a J-fraction with coefficients that are rational functions rather than polynomials.

7 Set partitions: Proofs

7.1 S-fraction: Proof of Theorem 3.1

It is immediate from the definitions (2.2) and (3.2) that $B_n(x, y, v) = P_n(x, y, 0, v)$. We shall prove Theorem 3.1 by translating the interpretation (2.5) of $P_n(x, y, 0, v)$ to set partitions via a suitable bijection.

We define a mapping from set partitions to permutations as follows: Given a set partition $\pi \in \Pi_n$, we define the permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ such that the disjoint cycles of σ are the blocks of π , each traversed in increasing order (with the largest element of course followed by the smallest element). The mapping $\pi \mapsto \sigma$ is clearly a bijection of Π_n onto \mathfrak{S}_n^* , where \mathfrak{S}_n^* denotes the subset of \mathfrak{S}_n consisting of permutations in which each cycle of length $\ell \geq 2$ contains precisely one cycle peak (namely, the cycle maximum), one cycle valley (namely, the cycle minimum), $\ell - 2$ cycle double rises, and no cycle double falls. Observe now that these are precisely the permutations in

which each cycle has exactly one non-excedance, i.e. in which $\text{exc}(\sigma) + \text{cyc}(\sigma) = n$. So setting $u = 0$ in (2.5) corresponds to restricting the sum to \mathfrak{S}_n^* , which we can then pull back to Π_n via the bijection. We clearly have $\text{cyc}(\sigma) = |\pi|$. To finish the proof, we need only interpret $\text{errec}(\sigma)$ in terms of π .

But this is easy. By definition, $\sigma(i)$ is the next-larger element of the block $B_\pi(i)$ after i , in case i is not the largest element of $B_\pi(i)$, and is the smallest element of $B_\pi(i)$, in case i is the largest element of $B_\pi(i)$. So $\sigma(i) = i$ if and only if i is a singleton; $\sigma(i) < i$ if and only if i is the largest element of a non-singleton block; and $\sigma(i) > i$ if and only if i is a non-largest element of a (necessarily non-singleton) block.

When is an index i an exclusive record of σ ? An exclusive record is simply a record that is not a fixed point, or equivalently a record that is an excedance. So we eliminate the non-excedances by defining

$$\sigma'(i) = \begin{cases} \sigma(i) & \text{if } \sigma(i) > i \\ 0 & \text{if } \sigma(i) \leq i \end{cases} \quad (7.1)$$

Then the exclusive records of the permutation σ are the same as the nonzero records of the word σ' , i.e. the indices i such that $\sigma'(i) \neq 0$ and $\sigma'(j) < \sigma'(i)$ for all $j < i$. [Note that the only repeated elements of σ' are 0, so there is no need to distinguish between records and strict records.] But this is exactly how we have defined “exclusive record” for a set partition π . \square

Remark. It would be nicer if we could use the interpretation (2.4) instead of (2.5) on the permutation side, i.e. employing arec instead of cyc , since we have available better refinements for the permutation polynomials that do not include the statistic cyc : compare Theorem 2.2 with 2.4, or 2.7 with 2.12, or 2.9 with 2.14. So we would like to find an injection of partitions of $[n]$ into permutations of $[n]$ in which blocks map to antirecords, and in which the image permutations are precisely those in which every index is either an excedance or an antirecord (that is, in which there are no nrcpeak , nrcdfall or nrfix). But we have been unable to find such a mapping. \blacksquare

7.2 First master J-fraction: Proof of Theorems 3.2, 3.3 and 3.9

In this section we will prove the first master J-fraction for set partitions (Theorem 3.9). As a consequence we will also obtain Theorem 3.3, which is obtained from Theorem 3.9 by the specialization (3.32); and Theorem 3.2, which is a special case of Theorem 3.3. We will also obtain a second proof of Theorem 3.1, which is linked by contraction (1.3) to the specialization $x_1 = x_2, y_1 = y_2, v_1 = v_2$ of Theorem 3.2.

To prove Theorem 3.9, we will employ the Kasraoui–Zeng [64] bijection, which is a variant of one proposed earlier by Flajolet [48]. (We will discuss the Flajolet bijection in the next subsection.) However, before introducing this bijection we need first to reinterpret the polynomial $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ defined in (3.28) by reversing the order of the vertices $1, \dots, n$. (The reason for this somewhat embarrassing reversal will be discussed after the proof.) So, given any set partition $\pi \in \Pi_n$, we define $\tilde{\pi} \in \Pi_n$ to

be the reversal of π , i.e. the image of π under the map $i \mapsto \tilde{i} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} n + 1 - i$. We then define reversals of the statistics (3.23) employed in (3.28):

$$\tilde{\text{cr}}(k, \pi) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \text{cr}(\tilde{k}, \tilde{\pi}) = \#\{i < j < k < l: (i, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi \text{ and } (j, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi\} \quad (7.2a)$$

$$\tilde{\text{ne}}(k, \pi) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \text{ne}(\tilde{k}, \tilde{\pi}) = \#\{i < j < k < l: (i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi \text{ and } (j, k) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi\} \quad (7.2b)$$

$$\widetilde{\text{qne}}(k, \pi) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \text{qne}(\tilde{k}, \tilde{\pi}) = \#\{i < k < l: (i, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi\} \quad (7.2c)$$

Thus, $\tilde{\text{cr}}$ and $\tilde{\text{ne}}$ are like cr and ne but put the distinguished index in third rather than second position. On the other hand, the definition of qne is reversal-invariant, so that in fact $\widetilde{\text{qne}}(k, \pi) = \text{qne}(k, \pi)$. Now summing over $\pi \in \Pi_n$ is of course equivalent to summing over $\tilde{\pi} \in \Pi_n$; and reversal interchanges openers with closers. It follows that the polynomial $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ defined in (3.28) can equivalently be written as

$$B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} \prod_{i \in \text{closers}} \mathbf{a}_{\tilde{\text{cr}}(i, \pi), \tilde{\text{ne}}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{openers}} \mathbf{b}_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{insiders}} \mathbf{d}_{\tilde{\text{cr}}(i, \pi), \tilde{\text{ne}}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{singletons}} \mathbf{e}_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)}. \quad (7.3)$$

We will employ the reinterpretation (7.3) in our proof, because its groupings of closers-and-insiders and openers-and-singletons are better adapted to the Kasraoui–Zeng bijection than the groupings of openers-and-insiders and closers-and-singletons employed in our original (and in our opinion more natural) definition (3.28).

Let us now define the Kasraoui–Zeng [64] bijection, which is a bijection from Π_n to the set of $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C}^{(1)}, \mathbf{C}^{(2)})$ -labeled 2-colored Motzkin paths of length n , where

$$A_k = 1 \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (7.4a)$$

$$B_k = k \quad \text{for } k \geq 1 \quad (7.4b)$$

$$C_k^{(1)} = k \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (7.4c)$$

$$C_k^{(2)} = 1 \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (7.4d)$$

As before, we will begin by explaining how the Motzkin path ω is defined; then we will explain how the labels ξ are defined; next we will prove that the mapping is indeed a bijection; next we will translate the various statistics from Π_n to our labeled Motzkin paths; and finally we will sum over labels ξ to obtain the weight $W(\omega)$ associated to a Motzkin path ω , which upon applying (5.2) will yield Theorem 3.9.

Step 1: Definition of the Motzkin path. Given a set partition $\pi \in \Pi_n$, we classify the indices $i \in [n]$ in the usual way as opener, closer, insider or singleton. We then define a path $\omega = (\omega_0, \dots, \omega_n)$ starting at $\omega_0 = (0, 0)$ and ending at $\omega_n = (n, 0)$, with steps s_1, \dots, s_n , as follows:

- If i is an opener, then s_i is a rise.
- If i is a closer, then s_i is a fall.

- If i is an insider, then s_i is a level step of type 1.
- If i is a singleton, then s_i is a level step of type 2.

The interpretation of the heights h_i is almost immediate from this definition:

Lemma 7.1. *For $i \in \{0, \dots, n\}$, h_i is the number of blocks that are “started but unfinished” after stage i , i.e.*

$$h_i = \#\{B \in \pi : \min B \leq i < \max B\}. \quad (7.5)$$

In particular, it follows that ω is indeed a Motzkin path, i.e. all the heights h_i are nonnegative and $h_n = 0$.

Step 2: Definition of the labels ξ_i . If i is an opener or a singleton, we set $\xi_i = 1$ as required by (7.4). If i is an insider or a closer, we look at the h_{i-1} blocks $B_1, \dots, B_{h_{i-1}}$ that are “started but unfinished” after stage $i-1$ (note that we must have $h_{i-1} \geq 1$). For each $j \in [h_{i-1}]$, let y_j be the maximal element of $B_j \cap [i-1]$; it is necessarily an opener or insider in B_j , and its successor in B_j will be $\geq i$. (Kasraoui and Zeng [64] call y_j the “vacant vertex”.) We order the blocks B_j so that $y_1 < y_2 < \dots < y_{h_{i-1}}$. Then the vertex i belongs to precisely one of these blocks B_j (and is thus the successor of y_j within this block); we set $\xi_i = j$.

Step 3: Proof of bijection. It is easy to describe the inverse map to $\sigma \mapsto (\omega, \xi)$. Successively for $i = 1, \dots, n$, we use the 2-colored Motzkin path ω to read off the type of the vertex i (opener, closer, insider or singleton); and if i is an insider or closer, we use the label ξ_i to decide to which “started but unfinished” block the vertex i should be attached.

Step 4: Translation of the statistics. This too is straightforward:

Lemma 7.2.

(a) *If i is an insider or a closer, then*

$$\tilde{\text{cr}}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1} - \xi_i \quad (7.6a)$$

$$\tilde{\text{ne}}(i, \pi) = \xi_i - 1 \quad (7.6b)$$

(b) *If i is a singleton or an opener, then*

$$\text{qne}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1}. \quad (7.7)$$

PROOF. (a) This is [64, Proposition 3.3], but for completeness we give the proof. By definition, $\tilde{\text{cr}}(i, \pi)$ is the number of quadruplets $r < s < i < l$ such that $(r, i) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and $(s, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$. But this means that, of the h_{i-1} vacant vertices existing at the beginning of stage i , r is the ξ_i th vacant vertex and s is a later vacant vertex. The number of such vertices s is therefore $\tilde{\text{cr}}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1} - \xi_i$. Similarly, $\tilde{\text{ne}}(i, \pi)$ is the number of quadruplets $r < s < i < l$ such that $(r, l) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$ and $(s, i) \in \mathcal{G}_\pi$. But this means that s

is the ξ_i th vacant vertex and that r is an earlier vacant vertex. Therefore the number of such vertices r is $\tilde{n}e(i, \pi) = \xi_i - 1$.

(b) Let $B_1, \dots, B_{h_{i-1}}$ be the blocks that are “started but unfinished” after stage $i-1$, and let y_j be the maximal element of $B_j \cap [i-1]$. If i is a singleton or an opener, then each of the vertices y_j is the initial point of an arc that ends at a vertex $> i$; and these are the only vertices that do so. So $\text{qne}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1}$. [If, by contrast, i is an insider or a closer, then one of the y_j is the initial point of an arc that ends at i , so $\text{qne}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1} - 1$, in agreement with (3.27) and part (a).] \square

Step 5: Computation of the weights (3.30). Using the bijection, we transfer the weights (7.3) from π to (ω, ξ) and then sum over ξ to obtain the weight $W(\omega)$. This weight is factorized over the individual steps s_i , as follows:

- If s_i is a rise starting at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is an opener), then from (7.7) the weight is

$$a_k = \mathbf{b}_k . \quad (7.8)$$

- If s_i is a fall starting at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is a closer and $k \geq 1$), then from (7.6) the weight is

$$b_k = \sum_{\xi_i=1}^k \mathbf{a}_{k-\xi_i, \xi_i-1} = \mathbf{a}_{k-1}^* \quad (7.9)$$

where \mathbf{a}_{k-1}^* was defined in (3.31).

- If s_i is a level step of type 1 at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is an insider and $k \geq 1$), then from (7.6) the weight is

$$c_k^{(1)} = \sum_{\xi_i=1}^k \mathbf{d}_{k-\xi_i, \xi_i-1} = \mathbf{d}_{k-1}^* . \quad (7.10)$$

- If s_i is a level step of type 2 at height $h_{i-1} = k$ (so that i is a singleton), then from (7.7) the weight is

$$c_k^{(2)} = \mathbf{e}_k . \quad (7.11)$$

Setting $\gamma_k = c_k^{(1)} + c_k^{(2)}$ and $\beta_k = a_{k-1} b_k$ as instructed in (5.2), we obtain the weights (3.30). This completes the proof of Theorem 3.9. \square

Remark. Theorem 3.16 on counting connected components in set partitions, as applied to Theorem 3.9, has an easy proof in our labeled-Motzkin-paths formalism. From Lemma 7.1 we see that i is a divider (see Section 3.13) if and only if $h_i = 0$. And this happens if and only if step s_i is either a fall starting at height $h_{i-1} = 1$ or a level step of type 2 at height $h_{i-1} = 0$. So, giving each connected component a weight ζ amounts to multiplying \mathbf{b}_0 and \mathbf{e}_0 by ζ . In the J-fraction coefficients (3.30) this multiplies γ_0 and β_1 by ζ , exactly as asserted in Theorem 3.16. \blacksquare

Let us now explain why the reversal $\pi \mapsto \tilde{\pi}$ seems to be needed in our proof. One reason was already explained: the Kasraoui–Zeng bijection naturally treats closers and insiders on the same footing, and openers and singletons on the same footing (cf. Lemma 7.2), whereas our original definition (3.28) interchanged closers with openers in this regard. So we need to pass to the reversed definition (7.3) in order to apply the bijection. (Alternatively, we could have applied the Kasraoui–Zeng bijection to the reversed partition $\tilde{\pi}$, but that strikes us as even more unnatural.)

Here is another perspective on the problem: In Section 3.7 we defined the polynomial $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ [cf. (3.28)] by close analogy with the permutation polynomial $Q_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ defined in (2.77), when a set partition $\pi \in \Pi_n$ is mapped onto a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$ by specifying that the disjoint cycles of σ are the blocks of π , each traversed in increasing order. In particular, openers correspond to cycle valleys, closers to cycle peaks, insiders to cycle double rises, and singletons to fixed points; cycle double falls are forbidden. But the Foata–Zeilberger bijection employed in our permutation proof (Section 6.1) does *not* correspond nicely to the Kasraoui–Zeng bijection used here in our set-partition proof. Both bijections “read” the input object (permutation or set partition) from left to right, but they employ very different senses of “reading”. In the Foata–Zeilberger bijection, at stage i we employ the entire permutation σ — not just its restriction $\sigma(1) \cdots \sigma(i)$ — in defining both the Motzkin path and the labels. In the Kasraoui–Zeng bijection, by contrast, at stage i we know only the restriction of π to $[1, i]$, together with the status of vertex i as opener, closer, insider or singleton; but if i is an opener or insider, we do *not* know anything about the part of its block to its right (except that it is nonempty). So the definition (3.28) of the polynomial $B_n(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ does not correspond nicely to what is needed in the proof; it turns out that the reformulation (7.3) is more appropriate.

7.3 Second master J-fraction: Proof of Theorems 3.5 and 3.12

In this section we will prove the second master J-fraction for set partitions (Theorem 3.12). As a consequence we will also obtain Theorem 3.5, which is obtained by comparing the specialization (3.32) of Theorem 3.9 with the same specialization of Theorem 3.12.

To prove Theorem 3.12, we will employ the Flajolet [48] bijection, which is a very slight variant of the Kasraoui–Zeng [64] bijection employed in the previous subsection. We will therefore be brief in our description.

Analogously to what was done in the preceding subsection, we need to use reversals of the statistics (3.47) employed in (3.58). These were already defined in (3.68):

$$\tilde{ov}(k, \pi) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} ov(\tilde{k}, \tilde{\pi}) = \#\{(B_1, B_2): k \in B_1 \text{ and } \min B_1 < \min B_2 < k < \max B_2\} \quad (7.12a)$$

$$\widetilde{cov}(k, \pi) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} cov(\tilde{k}, \tilde{\pi}) = \#\{(B_1, B_2): k \in B_2 \text{ and } \min B_1 < \min B_2 < k < \max B_1\} \quad (7.12b)$$

$$\widetilde{qcov}(k, \pi) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} qcov(\tilde{k}, \tilde{\pi}) = \#\{B: B \not\ni k \text{ and } \min B < k < \max B\} \quad (7.12c)$$

But the definition of qcov is reversal-invariant, so that in fact $\widetilde{\text{qcov}}(k, \pi) = \text{qcov}(k, \pi)$. The polynomial $B_n^{(2)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ defined in (3.58) can then equivalently be written as

$$B_n^{(2)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} \prod_{i \in \text{closers}} a_{\widetilde{\text{ov}}(i, \pi), \widetilde{\text{cov}}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{openers}} b_{\text{qcov}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{insiders}} d_{\widetilde{\text{ov}}(i, \pi), \widetilde{\text{cov}}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{singletons}} e_{\text{qcov}(i, \pi)}. \quad (7.13)$$

The Flajolet bijection — just like the Kasraoui–Zeng bijection — takes Π_n to the set of $(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C}^{(1)}, \mathbf{C}^{(2)})$ -labeled 2-colored Motzkin paths of length n , where $\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{C}^{(1)}, \mathbf{C}^{(2)}$ are given by (7.4). The details are as follows:

Step 1: Definition of the Motzkin path. This is identical to the Kasraoui–Zeng bijection.

Step 2: Definition of the labels ξ_i . If i is an opener or a singleton, we set $\xi_i = 1$ as required by (7.4). If i is an insider or a closer, we look at the h_{i-1} blocks $B_1, \dots, B_{h_{i-1}}$ that are “started but unfinished” after stage $i - 1$ (note that we must have $h_{i-1} \geq 1$). For each $j \in [h_{i-1}]$, let x_j be the *minimal* element of $B_j \cap [i - 1]$, or in other words the opener of B_j . (This use of the minimal rather than maximal element of $B_j \cap [i - 1]$ is the *only* change from Kasraoui–Zeng.) We order the blocks B_j so that $x_1 < x_2 < \dots < x_{h_{i-1}}$. Then the vertex i belongs to precisely one of these blocks B_j ; we set $\xi_i = j$.

Step 3: Proof of bijection. Exactly as in Kasraoui–Zeng.

Step 4: Translation of the statistics. This too is straightforward, and is a direct analogue of Lemma 7.2:

Lemma 7.3.

(a) If i is an insider or a closer, then

$$\widetilde{\text{ov}}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1} - \xi_i \quad (7.14a)$$

$$\widetilde{\text{cov}}(i, \pi) = \xi_i - 1 \quad (7.14b)$$

(b) If i is a singleton or an opener, then

$$\text{qcov}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1}. \quad (7.15)$$

PROOF. (a) By definition, $\widetilde{\text{ov}}(i, \pi)$ is the number of blocks B' such that $\min B < \min B' < i < \max B'$, where B is the block containing i . But this is exactly the definition of $h_{i-1} - \xi_i$. Similarly, $\widetilde{\text{cov}}(i, \pi)$ is the number of blocks B' such that $\min B' < \min B < i < \max B'$, where B is the block containing i . But this is exactly the definition of $\xi_i - 1$.

(b) By definition, $\text{qcov}(i, \pi)$ is the number of blocks $B \not\ni i$ such that $\min B < i < \max B$. If i is a singleton or an opener, then this equals h_{i-1} . [If, by contrast, i is

an insider or a closer, then one of the blocks $B_1, \dots, B_{h_{i-1}}$ contains i , so $\text{qcov}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1} - 1$, in agreement with (3.52) and part (a).] \square

Step 5: Computation of the weights. Identical to Section 7.2, with the obvious substitutions $\tilde{c}r \rightarrow \tilde{ov}$, $\tilde{ne} \rightarrow \tilde{cov}$, $\text{qne} \rightarrow \text{qcov}$. This completes the proof of Theorem 3.12. \square

7.4 Third and fourth master J-fractions: Proof of Theorems 3.8 and 3.13

In this section we will prove the third and fourth master J-fractions for set partitions (Theorem 3.13). As a consequence we will also obtain Theorem 3.8, which is obtained by comparing the specialization (3.32) of Theorems 3.9, 3.12 and 3.13.

To prove Theorem 3.13, we will employ a bizarre amalgam of the Flajolet and Kasraoui–Zeng bijections, in which the labels for insiders are given by Flajolet and those for closers by Kasraoui–Zeng, or vice versa. We will again be brief in our description.

Once again we begin by defining the reversed statistics (7.2) and (7.12). We then rewrite the polynomials $B_n^{(3)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ and $B_n^{(4)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e})$ in terms of these reversed statistics:

$$B_n^{(3)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} \prod_{i \in \text{closers}} a_{\tilde{ov}(i, \pi), \tilde{cov}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{openers}} b_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{insiders}} d_{\tilde{c}r(i, \pi), \tilde{ne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{singletons}} e_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)}. \quad (7.16)$$

$$B_n^{(4)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{d}, \mathbf{e}) = \sum_{\pi \in \Pi_n} \prod_{i \in \text{closers}} a_{\tilde{c}r(i, \pi), \tilde{ne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{openers}} b_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{insiders}} d_{\tilde{ov}(i, \pi), \tilde{cov}(i, \pi)} \prod_{i \in \text{singletons}} e_{\text{qne}(i, \pi)}. \quad (7.17)$$

Then the bijections — call them #3 and #4 — are defined as follows:

Step 1: Definition of the Motzkin path. Exactly as in the Kasraoui–Zeng and Flajolet bijections.

Step 2: Definition of the labels ξ_i . In both bijections #3 and #4, if i is an opener or a singleton, we set $\xi_i = 1$. Then, in bijection #3:

- If i is an insider, we define ξ_i as in the Kasraoui–Zeng bijection.
- If i is a closer, we define ξ_i as in the Flajolet bijection.

Bijection #4 is defined by the reverse scheme:

- If i is an insider, we define ξ_i as in the Flajolet bijection.

- If i is a closer, we define ξ_i as in the Kasraoui–Zeng bijection.

Step 3: Proof of bijection. Exactly as in Kasraoui–Zeng.

Step 4: Translation of the statistics.

Lemma 7.4.

In bijection #3:

(a) *If i is an insider, then*

$$\tilde{\text{cr}}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1} - \xi_i \quad (7.18a)$$

$$\tilde{\text{ne}}(i, \pi) = \xi_i - 1 \quad (7.18b)$$

(b) *If i is a closer, then*

$$\tilde{\text{ov}}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1} - \xi_i \quad (7.19a)$$

$$\tilde{\text{cov}}(i, \pi) = \xi_i - 1 \quad (7.19b)$$

In bijection #4:

(c) *If i is an insider, then*

$$\tilde{\text{ov}}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1} - \xi_i \quad (7.20a)$$

$$\tilde{\text{cov}}(i, \pi) = \xi_i - 1 \quad (7.20b)$$

(d) *If i is a closer, then*

$$\tilde{\text{cr}}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1} - \xi_i \quad (7.21a)$$

$$\tilde{\text{ne}}(i, \pi) = \xi_i - 1 \quad (7.21b)$$

In both bijections:

(e) *If i is a singleton or an opener, then*

$$\text{qne}(i, \pi) = \text{qcov}(i, \pi) = h_{i-1}. \quad (7.22)$$

PROOF. This is an immediate consequence of Lemmas 7.2 and 7.3 together with (3.55). \square

Step 5: Computation of the weights. Identical to Sections 7.2 and 7.3, with the obvious substitutions. This completes the proof of Theorem 3.13. \square

Acknowledgments

We wish to thank Andrew Elvey Price, Mathias Pétréolle and Jesús Salas for helpful conversations. We also thank Natasha Blitvić and Einar Steingrímsson for drawing our attention to their recent work [12].

This work has benefited greatly from the existence of the On-Line Encyclopedia of Integer Sequences [78]. We warmly thank Neil Sloane for founding this indispensable resource, and the hundreds of volunteers for helping to maintain and expand it.

This work has depended heavily on symbolic computation (in MATHEMATICA) carried out on large-memory computers funded by the U.S. taxpayers via National Science Foundation grant PHY-0424082, by the U.K. taxpayers via Engineering and Physical Sciences Research Council grant EP/N025636/1, and by a computer donation from the Dell Corporation; we are extremely grateful to all three.

This research was supported in part by Engineering and Physical Sciences Research Council grant EP/N025636/1.

References

- [1] M. Aigner, A characterization of the Bell numbers, *Discrete Math.* **205**, 207–210 (1999).
- [2] M. Aigner, Catalan and other numbers: a recurrent theme, in: *Algebraic Combinatorics and Computer Science*, edited by H. Crapo and D. Senato (Springer-Verlag Italia, Milan, 2001), pp. 347–390.
- [3] H. Albrecher, J.L. Teugels and K. Scheicher, A combinatorial identity for a problem in asymptotic statistics, *Appl. Anal. Discrete Math.* **3**, 64–68 (2009).
- [4] D. Arquès and J.-F. Béraud, Rooted maps on orientable surfaces, Riccati’s equation and continued fractions, *Discrete Math.* **215**, 1–12 (2000).
- [5] M.D. Atkinson and T. Stitt, Restricted permutations and the wreath product, *Discrete Math.* **259**, 19–36 (2002).
- [6] J.-L. Baril, Avoiding patterns in irreducible permutations, *Discrete Math. Theor. Comput. Sci.* **17**, no. 3, 13–30 (2016).
- [7] P. Barry, Continued fractions and transformations of integer sequences, *J. Integer Seq.* **12**, article 09.7.6 (2009).
- [8] J.S. Beissinger, The enumeration of irreducible combinatorial objects, *J. Combin. Theory A* **38**, 143–169 (1985).
- [9] E.A. Bender, A.M. Odlyzko and L.B. Richmond, The asymptotic number of irreducible partitions, *European J. Combin.* **6**, 1–6 (1985).
- [10] P. Biane, Permutations suivant le type d’excédance et le nombre d’inversions et interprétation combinatoire d’une fraction continue de Heine, *European J. Combin.* **14**, 277–284 (1993).

- [11] N. Blitvić, The (q, t) -Gaussian process, *J. Funct. Anal.* **263**, 3270–3305 (2012).
- [12] N. Blitvić and E. Steingrímsson, Permutations, moments, measures, preprint (2020), arXiv:2001.00280v2 [math.CO] at arXiv.org.
- [13] M. Bóna, *Combinatorics of Permutations*, 2nd ed. (CRC Press, Boca Raton, FL, 2012).
- [14] G. Boros and V. Moll, *Irresistible Integrals: Symbolics, Analysis and Experiments in the Evaluation of Integrals* (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2004).
- [15] F. Brenti, A class of q -symmetric functions arising from plethysm, *J. Combin. Theory A* **91**, 137–170 (2000).
- [16] D. Callan, A combinatorial survey of identities for the double factorial, preprint (2009), arXiv:0906.1317 [math.CO] at arXiv.org.
- [17] L. Carlitz, Eulerian numbers and polynomials of higher order, *Duke Math. J.* **27**, 401–423 (1960).
- [18] L. Carlitz and R. Scoville, Some permutation problems, *J. Combin. Theory A* **22**, 129–145 (1977).
- [19] W.Y.C. Chen, T.X.S. Li and D.G.L. Wang, A bijection between atomic partitions and unsplittable partitions, *Electron. J. Combin.* **18**, no. 1, #P7 (2011).
- [20] T.S. Chihara, *An Introduction to Orthogonal Polynomials* (Gordon and Breach, New York–London–Paris, 1978). Reprinted by Dover, Mineola NY, 2011.
- [21] A. Claesson, Generalized pattern avoidance, *European J. Combin.* **22**, 961–971 (2001).
- [22] A. Claesson and T. Mansour, Counting occurrences of a pattern of type $(1,2)$ or $(2,1)$ in permutations, *Adv. Appl. Math.* **29**, 293–310 (2002).
- [23] R.J. Clarke, A short proof of a result of Foata and Zeilberger, *Adv. Appl. Math.* **16**, 129–131 (1995).
- [24] R.J. Clarke, E. Steingrímsson and J. Zeng, New Euler-Mahonian statistics on permutations and words, *Adv. Appl. Math.* **18**, 237–270 (1997).
- [25] L. Comtet, Sur les coefficients de l'inverse de la série formelle $\sum n!t^n$, *C. R. Acad. Sci. Paris Sér. A-B* **275**, A569–572 (1972).
- [26] L. Comtet, *Advanced Combinatorics: The Art of Finite and Infinite Expansions* (Reidel, Dordrecht–Boston, 1974). [French original: *Analyse Combinatoire*, tomes I et II, Presses Universitaires de France, Paris, 1970.]
- [27] R. Cori, Indecomposable permutations, hypermaps and labeled Dyck paths, *J. Combin. Theory A* **116**, 1326–1343 (2009).

- [28] R. Cori and C. Reutenauer, On Sillke's bijection, *Theoret. Comput. Sci.* **658**, part A, 97–104 (2017).
- [29] S. Corteel, Crossings and alignments of permutations, *Adv. Appl. Math.* **38**, 149–163 (2007).
- [30] A. Cuyt, V.B. Petersen, B. Verdonk and H. Waadeland, *Handbook of Continued Fractions for Special Functions* (Springer-Verlag, New York, 2008).
- [31] A. de Médicis and X.G. Viennot, Moments des q -polynômes de Laguerre et la bijection de Foata–Zeilberger, *Adv. Appl. Math.* **15**, 262–304 (1994).
- [32] E. Deutsch and S. Elizalde, Cycle-up-down permutations, *Australas. J. Combin.* **50**, 187–199 (2011).
- [33] J.F. Dillon and J.P. Roselle, Eulerian numbers of higher order, *Duke Math. J.* **35**, 247–256 (1968).
- [34] D. Drake, The combinatorics of associated Hermite polynomials, *European J. Combin.* **30**, 1005–1021 (2009).
- [35] D. Dumont, A combinatorial interpretation for the Schett recurrence on the Jacobian elliptic functions, *Math. Comp.* **33**, 1293–1297 (1979).
- [36] D. Dumont, Une approche combinatoire des fonctions elliptiques de Jacobi, *Adv. Math.* **41**, 1–39 (1981).
- [37] D. Dumont, Pics de cycle et dérivées partielles, *Séminaire Lotharingien de Combinatoire* **13**, article B13a (1986).
- [38] D. Dumont, A continued fraction for Stirling numbers of the second kind, unpublished note (1989), cited in [110].
- [39] D. Dumont and G. Kreweras, Sur le développement d'une fraction continue liée à la série hypergéométrique et son interprétation en termes de records et anti-records dans les permutations, *European J. Combin.* **9**, 27–32 (1988).
- [40] R. Ehrenborg and M. Readdy, Juggling and applications to q -analogues, *Discrete Math.* **157**, 107–125 (1996).
- [41] S. Elizalde, Statistics on pattern-avoiding permutations, Ph.D. thesis, Massachusetts Institute of Technology, June 2004.
- [42] S. Elizalde, Continued fractions for permutation statistics, *Discrete Math. Theor. Comput. Sci.* **19**, no. 2, paper #11 (2018).
- [43] A. Elvey Price and A.D. Sokal, Self-convolutive recurrence, Riccati equation, T-fraction and moment representation for the record-antirecord permutation polynomials, in preparation.

- [44] G. Eneström, *Die Schriften Eulers chronologisch nach den Jahren geordnet, in denen sie verfaßt worden sind*, Jahresbericht der Deutschen Mathematiker-Vereinigung (Teubner, Leipzig, 1913).
- [45] L. Euler, *Methodis summandi superior ulterius promota*, Chapter 7 of *Institutiones Calculi Differentialis cum eius Usu in Analyti Finitorum ac Doctrina Serierum* [Foundations of Differential Calculus, with Applications to Finite Analysis and Series], 1755; reprinted in *Opera Omnia*, ser. 1, vol. 10, pp. ???–???. [Latin original available at <http://eulerarchive.maa.org/pages/E212.html>; English translation available at <https://www.agtz.mathematik.uni-mainz.de/algebraische-geometrie/van-str>]
- [46] L. Euler, *De seriebus divergentibus*, *Novi Commentarii Academiae Scientiarum Petropolitanae* **5**, 205–237 (1760). [Latin original and English and German translations available at <http://eulerarchive.maa.org/pages/E247.html>]
- [47] L. Euler, *De transformatione seriei divergentis $1 - mx + m(m + n)x^2 - m(m + n)(m + 2n)x^3 + \text{etc.}$ in fractionem continuam*, *Nova Acta Academiae Scientiarum Imperialis Petropolitanae* **2**, 36–45 (1788). [Latin original and English and German translations available at <http://eulerarchive.maa.org/pages/E616.html>]
- [48] P. Flajolet, *Combinatorial aspects of continued fractions*, *Discrete Math.* **32**, 125–161 (1980).
- [49] P. Flajolet, *On congruences and continued fractions for some classical combinatorial quantities*, *Discrete Math.* **41**, 145–153 (1982).
- [50] P. Flajolet and R. Schott, *Nonoverlapping partitions, continued fractions, Bessel functions and a divergent series*, *European J. Combin.* **11**, 421–432 (1990).
- [51] D. Foata and G.-N. Han, *New permutation coding and equidistribution of set-valued statistics*, *Theoret. Comput. Sci.* **410**, 3743–3750 (2009).
- [52] D. Foata and M.-P. Schützenberger, *Théorie Géométrique des Polynômes Eulériens*, *Lecture Notes in Mathematics #138* (Springer-Verlag, Berlin–New York, 1970). Available on-line at <http://www.emis.de/journals/SLC/books/foaschuetz.html>
- [53] D. Foata and D. Zeilberger, *Denert’s permutation statistic is indeed Euler-Mahonian*, *Stud. Appl. Math.* **83**, 31–59 (1990).
- [54] J. Françon and G. Viennot, *Permutations selon leurs pics, creux, doubles montées et double descentes, nombres d’Euler et nombres de Genocchi*, *Discrete Math.* **28**, 21–35 (1979).
- [55] G. Frobenius, *Über die Bernoullischen Zahlen und die Eulerschen Polynome*, *Sitzungsberichte der Königlich Preussischen Akademie der Wissenschaften [Berlin]* (1910), 809–847.

- [56] G. Gasper and M. Rahman, *Basic Hypergeometric Series*, 2nd ed. (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge–New York, 2004).
- [57] R.L. Graham, D.E. Knuth and O. Patashnik, *Concrete Mathematics: A Foundation for Computer Science*, 2nd ed. (Addison-Wesley, Reading, Mass., 1994).
- [58] E. Heine, Untersuchungen über die Reihe $1 + \frac{(1-q^\alpha)(1-q^\beta)}{(1-q)(1-q^\gamma)}$.
 $x + \frac{(1-q^\alpha)(1-q^{\alpha+1})(1-q^\beta)(1-q^{\beta+1})}{(1-q)(1-q^2)(1-q^\gamma)(1-q^{\gamma+1})} \cdot x^2 + \dots$, J. reine
angew. Math. **34**, 285–328 (1847). Available on-line at
<http://www.digizeitschriften.de/main/dms/img/?PPN=GDZPPN002145758>
- [59] W.B. Jones and W.J. Thron, *Continued Fractions: Analytic Theory and Applications* (Addison-Wesley, Reading MA, 1980).
- [60] M. Josuat-Vergès, A q -enumeration of alternating permutations, European J. Combin. **31**, 1892–1906 (2010).
- [61] M. Josuat-Vergès and J.S. Kim, Touchard–Riordan formulas, T-fractions, and Jacobi’s triple product identity, Ramanujan J. **30**, 341–378 (2013).
- [62] M. Josuat-Vergès and M. Rubey, Crossings, Motzkin paths and moments, Discrete Math. **311**, 2064–2078 (2011).
- [63] A. Kasraoui, D. Stanton and J. Zeng, The combinatorics of Al-Salam–Chihara q -Laguerre polynomials, Adv. Appl. Math. **47**, 216–239 (2011).
- [64] A. Kasraoui and J. Zeng, Distribution of crossings, nestings and alignments of two edges in matchings and partitions, Electron. J. Combin. **13**, #R33 (2006).
- [65] D.E. Knuth, Two notes on notation, Amer. Math. Monthly **99**, 403–422 (1992).
- [66] G. Ksavrelof and J. Zeng, Two involutions for signed excedance numbers, Séminaire Lotharingien de Combinatoire **49**, article B49e (2003).
- [67] W. Liu and Y. Liu, Rooted general maps on all surfaces, Ars Combin. **117**, 425–433 (2014).
- [68] L. Lorentzen and H. Waadeland, *Continued Fractions with Applications* (North-Holland, Amsterdam, 1992).
- [69] S.-M. Ma, Counting permutations by numbers of excedances, fixed points and cycles, Bull. Austral. Math. Soc. **85**, 415–421 (2012).
- [70] S.-M. Ma, Derivative polynomials and enumeration of permutations by number of interior and left peaks, Discrete Math. **312**, 405–412 (2012).
- [71] S.-M. Ma, A family of two-variable derivative polynomials for tangent and secant, Electron. J. Combin. **20**, no. 1, #P11 (2013).

- [72] S.-M. Ma, Some combinatorial arrays generated by context-free grammars, *European J. Combin.* **34**, 1081–1091 (2013).
- [73] S.-M. Ma and Y.-N. Yeh, Stirling permutations, cycle structure of permutations and perfect matchings, *Electron. J. Combin.* **22**, no. 4, #P4.42 (2015).
- [74] S.-M. Ma and Y.-N. Yeh, Eulerian polynomials, Stirling permutations of the second kind and perfect matchings, *Electron. J. Combin.* **24**, no. 4, #P4.27 (2017).
- [75] T. Mansour, *Combinatorics of Set Partitions* (CRC Press, Boca Raton, FL, 2013).
- [76] R.J. Martin and M.J. Kearney, An exactly solvable self-convolutive recurrence, *Aequationes Math.* **80**, 291–318 (2010).
- [77] S.C. Milne, Restricted growth functions, rank row matchings of partition lattices, and q -Stirling numbers, *Adv. Math.* **43**, 173–196 (1982).
- [78] The On-Line Encyclopedia of Integer Sequences, published electronically at <http://oeis.org>
- [79] J.-G. Penaud, Une preuve bijective d’une formule de Touchard–Riordan, *Discrete Math.* **139**, 347–360 (1995).
- [80] T.K. Petersen, Enriched P-partitions and peak algebras, *Adv. Math.* **209**, 561–610 (2007).
- [81] H. Prodinger, On Touchard’s continued fraction and extensions: combinatorics-free, self-contained proofs, *Quaestiones Math.* **35**, 431–445 (2012).
- [82] A. Randrianarivony, Correspondances entre les différents types de bijections entre le groupe symétrique et les chemins de Motzkin valués, *Séminaire Lotharingien de Combinatoire* **35**, article B35h (1995).
- [83] A. Randrianarivony, Moments des polynômes orthogonaux unitaires de Sheffer généralisés et spécialisations, *European J. Combin.* **19**, 507–518 (1998).
- [84] A. Randrianarivony and J. Zeng, Sur une extension des nombres d’Euler et les records des permutations alternantes, *J. Combin. Theory A* **68**, 86–99 (1994).
- [85] R.C. Read, The chord intersection problem, in: *Second International Conference on Combinatorial Mathematics* edited by A. Gewirtz and L.V. Quintas, *Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences* #319 (New York Academy of Sciences, New York, 1979), pp. 444–454.
- [86] J. Riordan, The distribution of crossings of chords joining pairs of $2n$ points on a circle, *Math. Comp.* **29**, 215–222 (1975).
- [87] L.J. Rogers, On the representation of certain asymptotic series as convergent continued fractions, *Proc. London Math. Soc. (series 2)* **4**, 72–89 (1907).

- [88] B.E. Sagan, A maj statistic for set partitions, *European J. Combin.* **12**, 69–79 (1991).
- [89] J. Salas, private communication (December 2018).
- [90] C.D. Savage and G. Viswanathan, The $1/k$ -Eulerian polynomials, *Electron. J. Combin.* **19**, no. 1, #P9 (2012).
- [91] H. Shin and J. Zeng, The q -tangent and q -secant numbers via continued fractions, *European J. Combin.* **31**, 1689–1705 (2010).
- [92] H. Shin and J. Zeng, The symmetric and unimodal expansion of Eulerian polynomials via continued fractions, *European J. Combin.* **33**, 111–127 (2012).
- [93] H. Shin and J. Zeng, Symmetric unimodal expansions of excedances in colored permutations, *European J. Combin.* **52A**, 174–196 (2016).
- [94] R. Simion and D. Stanton, Specializations of generalized Laguerre polynomials, *SIAM J. Math. Anal.* **25**, 712–719 (1994).
- [95] R. Simion and D. Stanton, Octabasic Laguerre polynomials and permutation statistics, *J. Comput. Appl. Math.* **68**, 297–329 (1996).
- [96] R.P. Stanley, *Enumerative Combinatorics*, vol. 1 (Wadsworth & Brooks/Cole, Monterey, California, 1986). Reprinted by Cambridge University Press, 1999.
- [97] R.P. Stanley, *Catalan Numbers* (Cambridge University Press, New York, 2015).
- [98] T.J. Stieltjes, Sur la réduction en fraction continue d’une série procédant selon les puissances descendantes d’une variable, *Ann. Fac. Sci. Toulouse* **3**, H1–H17 (1889).
- [99] T.J. Stieltjes, Recherches sur les fractions continues, *Ann. Fac. Sci. Toulouse* **8**, J1–J122 (1894) and **9**, A1–A47 (1895). [Reprinted, together with an English translation, in T.J. Stieltjes, *Œuvres Complètes/Collected Papers* (Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1993), vol. II, pp. 401–566 and 609–745.]
- [100] R.A. Sulanke, Catalan path statistics having the Narayana distribution, *Discrete Math.* **180**, 369–389 (1998).
- [101] R.A. Sulanke, Constraint-sensitive Catalan path statistics having the Narayana distribution, *Discrete Math.* **204**, 397–414 (1999).
- [102] J. Touchard, Sur un problème de configurations et sur les fractions continues, *Canad. J. Math.* **4**, 2–25 (1952).
- [103] J. Touchard, Nombres exponentiels et nombres de Bernoulli, *Canad. J. Math.* **8**, 305–320 (1956).
- [104] A. Vella, Pattern avoidance in permutations: linear and cyclic orders, *Electron. J. Combin.* **9**, no. 2, #R18 (2003).

- [105] G. Viennot, Une théorie combinatoire des polynômes orthogonaux généraux, Notes de conférences données à l'Université du Québec à Montréal, septembre-octobre 1983. Available on-line at http://www.xavierviennot.org/xavier/polynomes_orthogonaux.html
- [106] M. Wachs and D. White, p, q -Stirling numbers and set partition statistics, *J. Combin. Theory A* **56**, 27–46 (1991).
- [107] H.S. Wall, *Analytic Theory of Continued Fractions* (Van Nostrand, New York, 1948).
- [108] J. Zeng, Records, antirecords et permutations discordantes, *European J. Combin.* **10**, 103–109 (1989).
- [109] J. Zeng, Énumérations de permutations et J-fractions continues, *European J. Combin.* **14**, 373–382 (1993).
- [110] J. Zeng, The q -Stirling numbers, continued fractions and the q -Charlier and q -Laguerre polynomials, *J. Comput. Appl. Math.* **57**, 413–424 (1995).
- [111] Y. Zhuang, Eulerian polynomials and descent statistics, *Adv. Appl. Math.* **90**, 86–144 (2017).